ADAPTIVE POISSON DISORDER PROBLEM

ERHAN BAYRAKTAR, SAVAS DAYANIK, AND IOANNIS KARATZAS

Abstract. We study the quickest detection problem of a sudden change in the arrival rate of a Poisson process from a known value to an *unknown and unobservable* value at an *unknown and unobservable* disorder time. Our objective is to design an alarm time which is adapted to the history of the arrival process and detects the disorder time as soon as possible.

In previous solvable versions of the Poisson disorder problem, the arrival rate after the disorder has been assumed a known constant. In reality, however, we may at most have some prior information on the likely values of the new arrival rate before the disorder actually happens, and insufficient estimates of the new rate after the disorder happens. Consequently, we assume in this paper that the new arrival rate after the disorder is a random variable.

The detection problem is shown to admit a finite-dimensional Markovian sufficient statistic if the new rate has a discrete distribution with finitely-many atoms. Furthermore, the detection problem is cast as a discounted optimal stopping problem with running cost for a finite-dimensional piecewise-deterministic Markov process.

This optimal stopping problem is studied in detail in the special case where the new arrival rate has Bernoulli distribution. This is a non-trivial optimal stopping problem for a two-dimensional piecewise-deterministic Markov process driven by the same point process. Using a suitable single-jump operator, we solve it explicitly, describe the analytic properties of the value function and the stopping region, and present methods for their numerical calculation. We provide a concrete example where the value function does not satisfy the smooth-fit principle on a proper subset of the connected, continuously differentiable optimal stopping boundary, whereas it does on the rest.

Contents

1. Introduction and Synopsis 2

Part 1. ANALYSIS: PROBLEM DESCRIPTION, MODEL, AND APPROXIMATION 11

Date: November 6, 2005.

2000 *Mathematics Subject Classification.* Primary 62L10; Secondary 62L15, 62C10, 60G40.

Key words and phrases. Poisson disorder problem, quickest detection, optimal stopping.

2. Problem description 11
3. Sufficient statistics for the adaptive Poisson disorder problem 12
4. Poisson disorder problem with a Bernoulli post-disorder arrival rate 16
4.1. An optimal stopping problem for the quickest detection of the Poisson disorder 18
4.2. The sample-paths of the sufficient-statistic process $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}} = (\widetilde{\Phi}^{(0)}, \widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)})$ 19
4.3. Case I: A "large" disorder arrival rate 20
4.4. Case II: A "small" disorder arrival rate 20
5. A family of related optimal stopping problems 21
6. A bound on the alarm time 26
7. Appendix: proofs of selected results in Part 1 30

Part 2. SYNTHESIS: SOLUTION AND NUMERICAL METHODS 37
8. The solution 37
9. The structure of the stopping regions 38
10. The boundaries of the stopping regions 44
10.1. The entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^{e}_{n+1}$ 47
10.2. The exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^{x}_{n+1}$ 48
11. Case I revisited: efficient methods for "large" post-disorder arrival rates 49
12. The smoothness of the value functions and the stopping boundaries 53
12.1. The interplay between the exit and entrance boundaries 62
12.2. The regularity of the value functions and the optimal stopping boundaries when the disorder arrival rate λ is "large" 65
12.3. Failure of the smooth-fit principle: a concrete example 69
13. Appendix: proofs of selected results in Part 2 75
References 83

1. Introduction and Synopsis

Suppose that arrivals of certain events constitute a Poisson process $N = \{N_t : t \geq 0\}$ with a known rate $\mu > 0$. At some time θ, the arrival rate suddenly changes from μ to Λ. Both the *disorder time* θ and the *post-disorder arrival rate* Λ of the Poisson process are unknown and unobservable. Our problem is to find an alarm time τ which depends only on the past and the present observations of the process N, and detects the disorder time θ as soon as possible.

More precisely, we shall assume that θ and Λ are random variables on some probability space $(\Omega, \mathcal{H}, \mathbb{P})$, on which the process N is also defined; the variables θ, Λ are independent of each other and of the process N. An alarm time is a stopping time τ of the history of the process N. We shall try to choose such a stopping time so as to minimize the Bayes risk

$$\mathbb{P}\{\tau < \theta\} + c\,\mathbb{E}(\tau - \theta)^+, \tag{1.1}$$

namely, the sum of the frequency $\mathbb{P}\{\tau < \theta\}$ of the false alarms and the expected cost $c\,\mathbb{E}(\tau - \theta)^+$ of the detection delay.

We shall assume that the post-disorder arrival rate Λ has some general prior distribution $\nu(\cdot)$. Similarly, the disorder time θ will be assumed to have an exponential distribution conditionally on that the disorder has not happened yet, i.e., for some $\pi \in [0, 1)$ and $\lambda > 0$

$$\mathbb{P}\{\theta = 0\} = \pi \qquad \text{and} \qquad \mathbb{P}\{\theta > t \mid \theta > 0\} = e^{-\lambda t},\ t \geq 0. \tag{1.2}$$

The Poisson disorder problem with a *known* post-disorder rate (namely, Λ equals a known constant with probability one) was studied first by Galchuk and Rozovskii (1971) and was solved completely by Peskir and Shiryaev (2002). In the meantime, Davis (1976) noticed that several forms of Bayes risks including (1.1) admit similar solutions. He called this class of problems *standard Poisson disorder problems*, and found a partial solution. Recently, Bayraktar and Dayanik (2003) solved the Poisson disorder problem when the detection delay is penalized exponentially. Bayraktar, Dayanik and Karatzas (2004b) showed that the exponential detection delay penalty in fact leads to another variant of standard Poisson disorder problems if the "standards" suggested by M. Davis are restated under a suitable reference probability measure. It was also shown that use of a suitable reference probability measure reduces the dimension of the Markovian sufficient statistic for the detection problem, and the solution of the standard Poisson disorder problem was described fully.

We believe that *unknown and unobservable* post-disorder arrival rate Λ captures quite well real-life applications of change-point detection theory. Before the onset of the new regime, past experience may help us at most to fit an apriori distribution $\nu(\cdot)$ on the likely values of the new arrival rate of N after the disorder. Even after the disorder happens, we may not have enough observations to get a reliable statistical estimate of the post-disorder rate. Indeed, since a good alarm is expected to sound as soon as the disorder happens, we may have very few observations of N sampled from the new regime since the disorder.

Let us highlight our approach to the problem and our main results. We show that the most general such detection problem is equivalent, under a reference probability measure, to a discounted optimal stopping problem with a running cost for an infinite-dimensional Markovian sufficient statistic. However, the dimension becomes finite as soon as the prior probability distribution $\nu(\cdot)$ of the post-disorder arrival rate Λ charges only a finite number of atoms. This class of problems is of great interest since, in many applications, we have typically an empirical distribution of the post-disorder arrival rate, constructed either from finite past data or from expert opinions on the most significant likely values.

We then study in detail the case where the new arrival rate after the disorder is expected either to increase or to decrease by the same amount. The detection problem turns in this case into an *optimal stopping problem for a two-dimensional piecewise-deterministic Markov process*, driven by the same point process. We solve this optimal stopping problem fully by describing ε-optimal and optimal stopping times and identifing explicitly the non-trivial shape of the optimal continuation region.

The common approach to an optimal stopping problem for a continuous-time Markov process is to reformulate it as a free-boundary problem in terms of the infinitesimal generator of the Markov process. The free-boundary problems sometimes turn out to be quite hard, even in one dimension; see, for example, Galchuk and Rozovskii (1971), Peskir and Shiryaev (2002), Bayraktar and Dayanik (2003). Here the infinitesimal operator gets complicated further and becomes a singular partial differential-delay operator. Moreover, it is a non-trivial task, even in two dimensions, to guess the location, shape, and smoothness of the free-boundary separating the continuation and stopping regions, as well as the behavior of the value function along the boundary.

Instead, we follow a direct approach and work with integral operators rather than differential operators. As in Gugerli (1986) and Davis (1993), we use a suitable single-jump operator to strip the jumps off the original two-dimensional piecewise-deterministic Markov process and turn the original optimal stopping problem into a sequence of optimal stopping problems for a deterministic process with continuous paths. Using direct arguments, we are able to infer from the properties of the single-jump operator the location and shape of the optimal continuation region, as well as the smoothness of the switching boundary and the value function.

The single-jump operator also provides a straightforward numerical method for calculating the value function and the continuation region. The deterministic process obtained after removing the jumps from the original Markov process has two fundamentally different types of behavior. We tailor the naive numerical method to each case, by exploiting the behavior of the paths.

We also raise the question when the value function should be a classical solution of the relevant free-boundary problem. For a large range of configurations of parameters, both the value function and the boundary of the continuation region turn out to be continuously differentiable, and one may also choose to use finite-difference methods for differential-difference equations to solve the problem numerically. For a few other cases, we cannot qualify completely the degree of the smoothness of the value function. Viscosity approaches or some other techniques of non-smooth analysis are very likely to fill the gap, but we do not pursue this direction here. We report one concrete example on "partial" failure of the *smooth-fit principle*: in certain cases, the value function is continuously differentiable everywhere on the state space except on a proper subset of the connected and continuously differentiable optimal stopping boundary.

Synopsis. In Section 2, we present the model and the precise statement of the problem. A Poisson process N with arrival rate μ and two independent random variables θ and Λ with given prior probability distributions are introduced on a suitable probability space $(\Omega, \mathcal{H}, \mathbb{P}_0)$. Under a new probability measure $\mathbb{P}$ obtained from $\mathbb{P}_0$ by an absolutely continuous change of measure, (i) the process N becomes a Poisson process whose arrival rate changes from constant μ to the random Λ at time θ, and (ii) the random variables Λ and θ are independent and have the same distributions as those under $\mathbb{P}_0$.

Working under the reference probability measure $\mathbb{P}_0$ turns out to be convenient. In Section 3.1, the generalized Bayes theorem gives the new form

$$(3.2)\qquad R_\tau(\pi) = 1 - \pi + c(1-\pi)\,\mathbb{E}_0\left[\int_0^\tau e^{-\lambda t}\left(\Phi_t^{(0)} - \frac{\lambda}{c}\right)dt\right], \quad \tau \in \mathcal{S},$$

for the Bayes risk in (1.1), this time expressed under $\mathbb{P}_0$ in terms of a suitable process $\Phi^{(0)}$ adapted to the history of N. Unfortunately, this process is not Markovian in general. In fact, the dynamics of a family $\left\{\Phi^{(k)}\right\}_{k\in\mathbb{N}_0}$ of adapted processes including $\Phi^{(0)}$ are nested as in

$$(3.8)\qquad d\Phi_t^{(k)} = \lambda\left(m^{(k)} + \Phi_t^{(k)}\right)dt + \frac{1}{\mu}\,\Phi_{t-}^{(k+1)}(dN_t - \mu dt),\ t>0, \qquad \Phi_0^{(k)} = \frac{\pi}{1-\pi}\,m^{(k)}.$$

Hence the Poisson disorder problem is equivalent to the minimization of the Bayes risk in (3.2) over all stopping times τ of the infinite-dimensional Markovian sufficient statistic $\left\{\Phi^{(k)}\right\}_{k\in\mathbb{N}_0}$. However, Corollary 3.3 shows that only finitely many of the $\Phi^{(k)}$'s (as many as the number of atoms of the distribution $\nu(\cdot)$) contain all relevant information if the distribution $\nu(\cdot)$ is concentrated on a finite number of atoms.

In Section 4, we specialize to the detection problem where the post-disorder arrival rate Λ is expected either to increase by one unit or to decrease by one unit; namely, $\mu > 1$ and $\nu(\{\mu-1,\mu+1\}) = 1$. The sufficient statistic for the detection problem becomes the process $\{\Phi^{(0)}, \Phi^{(1)}\}$ with the dynamics

$$d\Phi_t^{(0)} = \lambda\left(1+\Phi_t^{(0)}\right)dt + \frac{1}{\mu}\,\Phi_{t-}^{(1)}(dN_t - \mu dt), \qquad \Phi_0^{(0)} = \frac{\pi}{1-\pi}, \tag{4.2}$$

$$d\Phi_t^{(1)} = \lambda\left(m+\Phi_t^{(1)}\right)dt + \frac{1}{\mu}\,\Phi_{t-}^{(0)}(dN_t - \mu dt), \qquad \Phi_0^{(1)} = \frac{\pi}{1-\pi}\,m, \tag{4.3}$$

where $m \triangleq \mathbb{E}_0[\Lambda-\mu] = \nu(\{\mu+1\}) - \nu(\{\mu-1\})$. If we rotate the coordinate system by 45° clockwise, then the dynamics of the sufficient statistic in the new coordinates $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Phi}} \triangleq \{\widetilde{\Phi}^{(0)}, \widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)}\}$

$$\begin{aligned} d\widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(0)} &= \left[(\lambda+1)\widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(0)} + \frac{\lambda(1-m)}{\sqrt{2}}\right]dt - \frac{1}{\mu}\,\widetilde{\Phi}_{t-}^{(0)}dN_t, \quad \widetilde{\Phi}_0^{(0)} = \frac{(1-m)\pi}{\sqrt{2}(1-\pi)}, \\ d\widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(1)} &= \left[(\lambda-1)\widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(1)} + \frac{\lambda(1+m)}{\sqrt{2}}\right]dt + \frac{1}{\mu}\,\widetilde{\Phi}_{t-}^{(1)}dN_t, \quad \widetilde{\Phi}_0^{(1)} = \frac{(1+m)\pi}{\sqrt{2}(1-\pi)} \end{aligned} \tag{4.6}$$

are autonomous. Between consecutive jumps of the Poisson process N, the sample paths of the process $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Phi}} = \{\widetilde{\Phi}^{(0)}, \widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)}\}$ follow the integral curves $t \mapsto (x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1))$, $t \in \mathbb{R}_+$ of the differential equations

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{d}{dt}x(t,\phi_0) &= (\lambda+1)x(t,\phi_0) + \frac{\lambda(1-m)}{\sqrt{2}}, \qquad x(0,\phi_0) = \phi_0, \\ \frac{d}{dt}y(t,\phi_1) &= (\lambda-1)y(t,\phi_1) + \frac{\lambda(1+m)}{\sqrt{2}}, \qquad y(0,\phi_1) = \phi_1. \end{aligned} \tag{4.7}$$

More precisely, if $\sigma_0 \equiv 0$ and σ_n, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ is the nth jump time of the Poisson process N, then (see also Figures 1 and 2 on page 19)

$$\begin{aligned} &\widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(0)} = x\left(t-\sigma_n, \widetilde{\Phi}_{\sigma_n}^{(0)}\right) \quad \text{and} \quad \widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(1)} = y\left(t-\sigma_n, \widetilde{\Phi}_{\sigma_n}^{(1)}\right), \qquad \sigma_n \le t < \sigma_{n+1},\ n \in \mathbb{N}_0, \\ &\widetilde{\Phi}_{\sigma_n}^{(0)} = \left(1-\frac{1}{\mu}\right)\widetilde{\Phi}_{\sigma_n-}^{(0)} \quad \text{and} \quad \widetilde{\Phi}_{\sigma_n}^{(1)} = \left(1+\frac{1}{\mu}\right)\widetilde{\Phi}_{\sigma_n-}^{(1)}, \qquad n \in \mathbb{N}_0. \end{aligned} \tag{4.10}$$

Moreover, the detection problem reduces to the discounted optimal stopping problem

$$\begin{aligned} V(\phi_0,\phi_1) &\triangleq \inf_{\tau\in\mathcal{S}} \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^\tau e^{-\lambda t} g\left(\widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(0)}, \widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(1)}\right)dt\right] \\ \text{with} \qquad g(\phi_0,\phi_1) &\triangleq \phi_0 + \phi_1 - \frac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2}, \qquad (\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 \end{aligned} \tag{4.12}$$

for the two-dimensional piecewise-deterministic Markov process $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Phi}} = \{\widetilde{\Phi}^{(0)}, \widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)}\}$ in (4.6) or (4.10).

To solve (4.12), we introduce in Section 5 the family of optimal stopping problems

$$(5.1)\qquad V_n(\phi_0,\phi_1) \triangleq \inf_{\tau\in\mathcal{S}}\ \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{\tau\wedge\sigma_n} e^{-\lambda t} g\left(\widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(0)},\widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(1)}\right)dt\right],\quad (\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}_+^2,\ n\in\mathbb{N}.$$

We show that the sequence $\{V_n(\cdot,\cdot)\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ converges to the value function $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ uniformly on $\mathbb{R}_+^2$. More precisely,

$$(5.2)\qquad \frac{\sqrt{2}}{c}\cdot\left(\frac{\mu}{\lambda+\mu}\right)^n \geq V_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)-V(\phi_0,\phi_1)\geq 0,\qquad n\in\mathbb{N},\ (\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}_+^2.$$

Following Gugerli (1986) and Davis (1993), we define the single-jump operator J on bounded Borel functions $w:\mathbb{R}_+^2\mapsto R$ by

$$(5.3)\qquad Jw(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)\triangleq \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{t\wedge\sigma_1} e^{-\lambda u} g\left(\widetilde{\Phi}_u^{(0)},\widetilde{\Phi}_u^{(1)}\right)du + 1_{\{t\geq\sigma_1\}}e^{-\lambda\sigma_1}w\left(\widetilde{\Phi}_{\sigma_1}^{(0)},\widetilde{\Phi}_{\sigma_1}^{(1)}\right)\right],$$

$$(5.7)\qquad = \int_0^t e^{-(\lambda+\mu)u}\big(g+\mu\cdot w\circ S\big)\big(x(u,\phi_0),y(u,\phi_1)\big)du,\qquad t\in[0,\infty],$$

where $S(x,y)\triangleq\Big((1-\frac{1}{\mu})\cdot x,(1+\frac{1}{\mu})\cdot y\Big)\in\mathbb{R}_+^2$ for every $(x,y)\in\mathbb{R}_+^2$, and

$$(5.4)\qquad J_t w(\phi_0,\phi_1)\triangleq \inf_{u\in[t,\infty]} Jw(u,(\phi_0,\phi_1)),\qquad t\in[0,\infty].$$

The value functions $V_n, n\in\mathbb{N}$ in (5.1) coincide with the functions v_n, $n\in\mathbb{N}$ defined sequentially by

$$(5.6)\qquad v_n\triangleq J_0 v_{n-1}\quad \forall\, n\in\mathbb{N},\quad\text{and}\quad v_0\equiv 0,$$

and $V(\cdot,\cdot)=v(\cdot,\cdot)\triangleq\lim_n v_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ on $\mathbb{R}_+^2$. Moreover, the form of the single-jump operator $Jw(\cdot,\cdot,\cdot)$ in (5.7) allows us to prove that the functions $v_n(\cdot,\cdot)\in\mathbb{N}$ and $v(\cdot,\cdot)$ are increasing in each argument, uniformly bounded, and concave. This information becomes crucial later in Section 9 as we study the shape of the continuation regions and the smoothness of the optimal stopping boundaries.

For every $n\in\mathbb{N}_0$, the value function $V_{n+1}(\cdot,\cdot)$ in (5.1) is attained by the stopping time S_{n+1} defined sequentially by

$$r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)\triangleq\inf\{t>0: v_{n+1}(x(t,\phi_0),y(t,\phi_1))=0\},\quad n\in\mathbb{N}_0,\ (\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}_+^2,$$

$$S_1\triangleq r_0\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_0\big)\wedge\sigma_1,\quad\text{and}\quad S_{n+1}\triangleq\left\{\begin{array}{ll} r_n\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_0\big), & \text{if }\ \sigma_1>r_n\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_0\big)\\ \sigma_1+S_n\circ\theta_{\sigma_1}, & \text{if }\ \sigma_1\leq r_n\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_0\big)\end{array}\right\},\quad n\in\mathbb{N},$$

where θ_s is the shift-operator on Ω: $N_t\circ\theta_s=N_{s+t}$; see Proposition 5.5 and Corollary 5.8. In other words, the best action before the $(n+1)$st Poisson arrival is to stop if the continuous parametric curve $t \mapsto \big(x(t,\Phi_0^{(0)}(\omega)), y(t,\Phi_0^{(1)}(\omega))\big)$, $t \in \mathbb{R}_+$ in (4.7) enters the $(n+1)$st "stopping region" $\{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : v_{n+1}(x,y) = 0\}$ before the arrival of the first Poisson event. Otherwise, it is better to wait, and stop if the curve $t \mapsto \big(x(t,\Phi_{\sigma_1(\omega)}^{(0)}(\omega)), y(t,\Phi_{\sigma_1(\omega)}^{(1)}(\omega))\big)$, $t \in \mathbb{R}_+$ enters the nth "stopping region" $\{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : v_n(x,y) = 0\}$ before the arrival of the next Poisson event, and so on; see also Figure 4(b) on page 39, Section 9.

The explicit optimal stopping rules S_n for $V_n(\cdot,\cdot)$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and the uniform convergence in (5.2) give an ε-optimal stopping time for $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ in (4.12). For every $\varepsilon > 0$,

$$\frac{\sqrt{2}}{c} \cdot \left(\frac{\mu}{\lambda+\mu}\right)^n < \varepsilon \quad \Longrightarrow \quad 0 \le \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{S_n} e^{-\lambda t} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t\big)dt\right] - V(\phi_0,\phi_1) < \varepsilon,\ (\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2.$$

In Proposition 5.12 of Section 5, we also prove that the problem with the value function $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ in (4.12) admits an optimal stopping time, and the classical stopping times $U_\varepsilon \triangleq \inf\{t \ge 0 : V(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t) \ge -\varepsilon\}$ are ε-optimal for every $\varepsilon \ge 0$.

In Section 6, we show that the optimal continuation region $\{(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : V(\phi_0,\phi_1) < 0\}$ for the problem $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ in (4.12) is a bounded subset of $\mathbb{R}_+^2$. The boundedness of this region and the concavity of the value function $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ will help us describe explicitly the structure of the continuation region in Section 9.

As a by-product of the results in Section 6, we obtain some simple bounds on the alarm time. When these are tight, they may serve as good approximate detection rules. The optimal stopping time $U_0 \triangleq \inf\{t \ge 0 : V(\widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(0)}, \widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(1)}) = 0\}$ is bounded by

$$\tau_{C_0} \triangleq \inf\left\{t \ge 0 : \widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(0)} + \widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(1)} \ge \frac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2}\right\} \le U_0 \le \tau_D \triangleq \inf\{t \ge 0 : \widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(0)} + \widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(1)} \ge \xi^*\} \tag{6.2}$$

for a suitable constant ξ^*. If $\lambda \ge \frac{\lambda+\mu}{c}(1-\lambda)$, then $\xi^* = \frac{\lambda+\mu}{c}\sqrt{2}$; otherwise, it is the explicit solution of (6.10), i.e.,

$$\xi^* = -\frac{\lambda(1+m)}{\sqrt{2}(\lambda-1)} + \left[\phi_1^* + \frac{\lambda(1+m)}{\sqrt{2}(\lambda-1)}\right]\left[1 + \phi_0^* \frac{\sqrt{2}(\lambda+1)}{\lambda(1-m)}\right]^{-\frac{\lambda-1}{\lambda+1}} > \frac{\lambda+\mu}{c}\sqrt{2}$$

where

$$\phi_0^* \triangleq \frac{(\lambda+\mu)(1-\lambda) - \lambda c}{c\sqrt{2}} \quad \text{and} \quad \phi_1^* \triangleq \frac{(\lambda+\mu)(1+\lambda) + \lambda c}{c\sqrt{2}}.$$

For small values of the ratio μ/c of the pre-disorder arrival rate and the detection delay cost per unit time, the thresholds of the lower and upper bounds in (6.2) on the optimal stopping time U_0 are close. Then the upper bound τ_D may serve as a simple approximate alarm time.

Section 8 starts with the description of the general sequential/numerical solution method. Each function $V_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ in (5.1) vanishes outside the region $D \triangleq \{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ : x+y \leq \xi^*\}$, where ξ^* is defined as above. On the bounded set D, we can find the functions $V_n(\cdot,\cdot) \equiv v_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ by repeatedly applying the operator J_0 in (5.4). In practice, the uniform convergence in (5.2) lets us control the number of iterations needed to achieve any given level of accuracy. The exponential rate of convergence also suggests that this sequential algorithm should be computationally feasible and accurate.

We tailor the general method mainly to two distinct cases (see below) of the detection problem. In the meantime, we also shed light on the structure of the solutions of the optimal stopping problems in (4.12) and (5.1). We show that the stopping regions

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{\Gamma}_n &\triangleq \{(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ : v_n(\phi_0,\phi_1) = 0\} = \{(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ : \gamma_n(\phi_0) \leq \phi_1\}, \qquad n \in \mathbb{N}, \\ \mathbf{\Gamma} &\triangleq \{(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ : v(\phi_0,\phi_1) = 0\} = \{(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ : \gamma(\phi_0) \leq \phi_1\} \end{aligned}$$

are convex epigraphs of some "boundary functions" $\gamma_n : \mathbb{R}_+ \mapsto \mathbb{R}$ and $\gamma : \mathbb{R}_+ \mapsto \mathbb{R}$, respectively. These boundary functions are strictly decreasing, continuous, and convex on their compact supports. The sequence $\{\gamma_n(\cdot)\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ is increasing and converges to $\gamma(\cdot)$; see Figure 4(a) on page 39.

Case I: A "large" disorder arrival rate $\lambda \geq (1+m)(c/2)$. After some preparations in Sections 9 and 10, we prove in Section 11 that

$$\begin{aligned} \big\{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ : v(x,y) = v_n(x,y)\big\} &\quad \text{increases to} \quad \mathbb{R}^2_+, \quad \text{and} \\ \{x \in \mathbb{R}_+ : \gamma(x) = \gamma_n(x)\} &\quad \text{increases to} \quad \mathbb{R}_+. \end{aligned}$$

Namely, every iteration $v_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ of the successive approximations in (5.6) gives the exact value function $v(\cdot,\cdot)$ on a subset of the state space $\mathbb{R}^2_+$ which increases to the whole space as the iterations progress. Based on this fact, **Methods B** and **C** on pages 50 and 52, respectively, gradually calculate the value function $v(\cdot,\cdot)$ on $\mathbb{R}^2_+$ and the optimal stopping boundary $\gamma(\cdot)$ on $\mathbb{R}_+$; see also Figure 6.

In Section 12.2, we prove that the value functions $v_n(\cdot,\cdot)$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $v(\cdot,\cdot)$ are continuously differentiable everywhere, and that the boundary functions $\gamma_n(\cdot)$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\gamma(\cdot)$ are continuously differentiable on their respective supports. The value function $v(\cdot,\cdot)$—obtained as the limit of the successive approximations in (5.6)—satisfies the variational inequalities in (12.1)-(12.4) associated with the optimal stopping problem (4.12) and is the unique solution (together with the boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma} \triangleq \{(x,\gamma(x)) : x \in \operatorname{supp}(\gamma)\}$) of the corresponding free-boundary problem. Finally, the smooth-fit principle also holds for the function $v(\cdot,\cdot)$ across the boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}$. These results ensure that the value function $v(\cdot,\cdot)$ can be calculated by using finite-difference methods for partial differential-difference equations.

Case II: A "small" disorder arrival rate $0 < \lambda < (1+m)(c/2)$. In this case we have to pay more attention to the structure of the boundaries $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1} = \{(x, \gamma_{n+1}(x)) : x \in \text{supp}(\gamma_{n+1})\}$ of the stopping regions $\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}$, $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$. For every $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$, the boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}$ is divided into the *entrance* and *exit boundaries*

$$\begin{aligned}\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1} &\triangleq \Big\{\big(x(r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_0), \gamma_{n+1}(y(r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_1)\big),\ \text{for some } (\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbf{C}_{n+1}\Big\},\\ \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1} &\triangleq \Big\{(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1} : (x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1))\in\mathbf{C}_{n+1},\ t\in(0,\delta] \text{ for some } \delta>0\Big\},\end{aligned} \tag{10.10}$$

respectively (in Case I, we always have $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1} \equiv \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$ for every $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$). We show that the value function $v_{n+1}(\cdot,\cdot)$ and the exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1}$ are completely determined by the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$ (see Lemma 10.7), and the value function $v_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ from the previous iteration determines the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$. Since $v_0 \equiv 0$ is already available, the general solution method outlined above can be enhanced as in **Method D** on page 62.

For certain configurations of parameters, we are able to prove that the value functions $v_{n+1}(\cdot,\cdot)$, $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$ are continuously differentiable everywhere on $\mathbb{R}^2_+\backslash\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1}$ and are not differentiable on the exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1}$, $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$, see Proposition 12.17 and Section 12.3. In Section 12.3, we give a concrete example for a case where the value function $v(\cdot,\cdot)$ of the optimal stopping problem in (4.12) is continuously differentiable everywhere on $\mathbb{R}^2_+\backslash\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x$ and is not differentiable on the exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x$ of the optimal stopping region $\mathbf{\Gamma}$. The interesting feature of this example is that the smooth-fit principle fails on some proper subset (namely, the exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x$) of the connected and continuously differentiable optimal stopping boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}$, while this principle holds on the rest; see Figure 9(d).

This work is divided naturally in two parts. In Part 1, we describe the problem, formulate a convenient model, and develop an important approximation. In Part 2, we use the approximation of Part 1 to develop the solution and study its properties. Both parts are accompanied by independent appendices which are the homes for long proofs.

Part 1. ANALYSIS: PROBLEM DESCRIPTION, MODEL, AND APPROXIMATION

2. Problem description

Let $N = \{N_t; t \geq 0\}$ be a homogeneous Poisson process with some rate $\mu > 0$ on a fixed probability space $(\Omega, \mathcal{H}, \mathbb{P}_0)$, which also supports two random variables θ and Λ independent of each other and of the process N. We shall denote by $\nu(\cdot)$ the distribution of the random variable Λ, assume that

$$m^{(k)} \triangleq \int_{\mathbb{R}} (v-\mu)^k \nu(dv), \qquad k \in \mathbb{N}_0 \qquad \text{are well-defined and finite,} \tag{2.1}$$

and that

$$\mathbb{P}_0\{\theta = 0\} = \pi \quad \text{and} \quad \mathbb{P}_0\{\theta > t\} = (1-\pi)e^{-\lambda t},\ t \geq 0 \tag{2.2}$$

hold for some constants $\lambda > 0$ and $\pi \in [0,1)$.

Let us denote by $\mathbb{F} = \{\mathcal{F}_t\}_{t \geq 0}$ the right-continuous enlargement with $\mathbb{P}_0$-null sets of the natural filtration $\sigma(N_s; 0 \leq s \leq t)$ of N. We also define a larger filtration $\mathbb{G} = \{\mathcal{G}_t\}_{t \geq 0}$ by setting $\mathcal{G}_t \triangleq \mathcal{F}_t \vee \sigma\{\theta, \Lambda\}$, $t \geq 0$. The $\mathbb{G}$-adapted, right-continuous (hence, $\mathbb{G}$-progressively measurable) process

$$h(t) \triangleq \mu 1_{\{t < \theta\}} + \Lambda 1_{\{t \geq \theta\}}, \quad t \geq 0 \tag{2.3}$$

induces the $(\mathbb{P}_0, \mathbb{G})$-martingale (see Brémaud (1981, pp. 165-168))

$$Z_t \triangleq \exp\left\{ \int_0^t \log\left(\frac{h(s-)}{\mu}\right) dN_s - \int_0^t (h(s) - \mu) ds \right\}, \qquad t \geq 0. \tag{2.4}$$

This martingale defines a new probability measure $\mathbb{P}$ on every $(\Omega, \mathcal{G}_t)$ by

$$\left.\frac{d\mathbb{P}}{d\mathbb{P}_0}\right|_{\mathcal{G}_t} = Z_t, \qquad t \geq 0. \tag{2.5}$$

Since $\mathbb{P}$ and $\mathbb{P}_0$ coincide on $\mathcal{G}_0 = \sigma\{\theta, \Lambda\}$, the random variables θ and Λ are independent and have the same distributions under both $\mathbb{P}$ and $\mathbb{P}_0$.

Under the new probability measure $\mathbb{P}$ the counting process N has $\mathbb{G}$-progressively measurable intensity given by $h(\cdot)$ of (2.3), namely $N_t - \int_0^t h(s) ds$, $t \geq 0$ is a $(\mathbb{P}, \mathbb{G})$-martingale. In other words, the $\mathbb{G}$-adapted process N is a Poisson process whose rate changes at time θ from μ to Λ.

In the Poisson disorder problem, only the process N is observable, and our objective is to detect the disorder time θ as quickly as possible. More precisely, we want to find an

$\mathbb{F}$-stopping time τ that minimizes the *Bayes risk*

$$R_\tau(\pi) \triangleq \mathbb{P}\{\tau < \theta\} + c\,\mathbb{E}(\tau - \theta)^+, \tag{2.6}$$

where $c > 0$ is a constant, and the expectation $\mathbb{E}$ is taken under the probability measure $\mathbb{P}$. Hence, we are interested in an alarm time τ which is adapted to the history of the process N, and minimizes the tradeoff between the frequency of false alarms $\mathbb{P}\{\tau < \theta\}$ and the expected time of delay $\mathbb{E}(\tau - \theta)^+$ between the alarm time and the unobservable disorder time.

In the next section, we shall formulate the quickest detection problem as a problem of optimal stopping for a suitable Markov process.

3. Sufficient statistics for the adaptive Poisson disorder problem

Let $\mathcal{S}$ be the collection of all $\mathbb{F}$-stopping times, and introduce the $\mathbb{F}$-adapted processes

$$\Pi_t \triangleq \mathbb{P}\{\theta \le t | \mathcal{F}_t\}, \quad \text{and} \quad \Phi_t^{(k)} \triangleq \frac{\mathbb{E}[(\Lambda - \mu)^k 1_{\{\theta \le t\}} | \mathcal{F}_t]}{1 - \Pi_t}, \quad k \in \mathbb{N}_0,\ t \ge 0. \tag{3.1}$$

Since Λ has the same distribution $\nu(\cdot)$ under $\mathbb{P}$ and $\mathbb{P}_0$, each $\Phi^{(k)}$, $k \in \mathbb{N}_0$ is well-defined by (2.1). The process $\Pi = \{\Pi_t, t \ge 0\}$ tracks the likelihood that a change in the intensity of N has already occurred, given past and present observations of the process. Each $\Phi^{(k)} = \{\Phi_t^{(k)}, t \ge 0\}$, $k \in \mathbb{N}$ may be regarded as a (weighted) *odds-ratio process*.

Our first lemma below shows that the minimum Bayes risk can be found by solving a discounted optimal stopping problem, with discount rate λ and running cost function $f(x) = x - \lambda/c$ for the $\mathbb{F}$-adapted process $\Phi^{(0)}$. The calculations are considerably easier when the process $\Phi^{(0)}$ has the Markov property. Unfortunately, this is not true in general. However, the explicit dynamics of $\Phi^{(0)}$ in Lemma 3.2 reveal that the infinite-dimensional sequence $\{\Phi^{(k)}\}_{k \in \mathbb{N}_0}$ of the processes in (3.1) is always a sufficient Markovian statistic for the quickest detection problem. The same result also suggests sufficient conditions for the existence of a *finite-dimensional* sufficient Markovian statistic, a case amenable to concrete analysis.

3.1. **Lemma.** *The Bayes risk in (2.6) equals*

$$R_\tau(\pi) = 1 - \pi + c(1-\pi)\,\mathbb{E}_0\left[\int_0^\tau e^{-\lambda t}\left(\Phi_t^{(0)} - \frac{\lambda}{c}\right) dt\right], \quad \tau \in \mathcal{S}, \tag{3.2}$$

where the expectation $\mathbb{E}_0$ is taken under the (reference) probability measure $\mathbb{P}_0$.

For several proofs below, the following observations will be useful. Every Z_t in (2.4) can be written as

$$Z_t = 1_{\{t<\theta\}} + \frac{L_t}{L_\theta} 1_{\{t \ge \theta\}} \tag{3.3}$$

in terms of the *likelihood ratio process*

$$L_t \triangleq \left(\frac{\Lambda}{\mu}\right)^{N_t} e^{-(\Lambda-\mu)t}, \qquad t \geq 0. \tag{3.4}$$

Then the generalized Bayes theorem (see, e.g., Liptser and Shiryaev (2001, Section 7.9)) and (3.3) imply

$$1 - \Pi_t = \frac{\mathbb{E}_0[Z_t 1_{\{\theta > t\}} | \mathcal{F}_t]}{\mathbb{E}_0[Z_t | \mathcal{F}_t]} = \frac{\mathbb{P}_0\{\theta > t | \mathcal{F}_t\}}{\mathbb{E}_0[Z_t | \mathcal{F}_t]} = \frac{(1-\pi)e^{-\lambda t}}{\mathbb{E}_0[Z_t | \mathcal{F}_t]}, \tag{3.5}$$

since θ is independent of the process N under $\mathbb{P}_0$ and has the distribution (2.2).

Proof of Lemma 3.1. By (3.1), the generalized Bayes theorem and (3.5), we have

$$\Phi_t^{(0)} = \frac{\mathbb{E}[1_{\{\theta \leq t\}} | \mathcal{F}_t]}{1 - \Pi_t} = \frac{\mathbb{E}_0[Z_t 1_{\{\theta \leq t\}} | \mathcal{F}_t]}{(1-\Pi_t)\mathbb{E}_0[Z_t | \mathcal{F}_t]} = \frac{\mathbb{E}_0[Z_t 1_{\{\theta \leq t\}} | \mathcal{F}_t]}{(1-\pi)e^{-\lambda t}}, \quad t \geq 0,$$

which gives

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbb{E}[(\tau-\theta)^+] &= \mathbb{E}\left[\int_0^\infty 1_{\{\theta \leq t < \tau\}} dt\right] = \int_0^\infty \mathbb{E}_0[Z_t 1_{\{\tau > t\}} 1_{\theta \leq t}] dt \\ &= \int_0^\infty \mathbb{E}_0\left[1_{\{\tau > t\}} \mathbb{E}_0[Z_t 1_{\{\theta \leq t\}} | \mathcal{F}_t]\right] dt = (1-\pi) \cdot \mathbb{E}_0\left[\int_0^\tau e^{-\lambda t} \Phi_t^{(0)} dt\right], \quad \tau \in \mathcal{S}. \end{aligned} \tag{3.6}$$

Suppose that $\tau \in \mathcal{S}$ takes countably many distinct values $\{t_n, n \in \mathbb{N}\}$ for some $t_n \in \mathbb{R}_+ \cup \{+\infty\}$. Then

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbb{P}\{\tau < \theta\} &= \sum_n \mathbb{P}\{t_n < \theta, \tau = t_n\} = \sum_n \mathbb{E}_0[Z_{t_n} 1_{\{t_n < \theta\}} 1_{\{\tau = t_n\}}] \\ &= \sum_n \mathbb{E}_0[1_{\{\theta > t_n\}} 1_{\{\tau = t_n\}}] = \sum_n (1-\pi) e^{-\lambda t_n} \cdot \mathbb{E}_0[1_{\{\tau = t_n\}}] \\ &= (1-\pi) \cdot \mathbb{E}_0 \sum_n \left[\left(1 - \int_0^{t^n} \lambda e^{-\lambda t} dt\right) 1_{\{\tau = t_n\}}\right] = (1-\pi) - (1-\pi)\lambda \cdot \mathbb{E}_0\left[\int_0^\tau e^{-\lambda t} dt\right]. \end{aligned} \tag{3.7}$$

An arbitrary stopping time $\tau \in \mathcal{S}$ is the almost-sure limit of a decreasing sequence $\{\tau_n\}_{n \geq 1} \subset \mathcal{S}$ of stopping times which take countably many values. For every τ_n, $n \in \mathbb{N}$, (3.7) holds. Since $t \mapsto 1_{\{t < \theta\}}$ and $t \mapsto \int_0^t e^{-\lambda s} ds$ are right-continuous and bounded, passage to limit as $n \to \infty$ and the bounded convergence theorem verifies (3.7) for every $\tau \in \mathcal{S}$. The sum of (3.6) and (3.7) gives (3.2). $\square$

3.2. **Lemma.** *Let $m^{(k)}$, $k \in \mathbb{N}_0$ be defined as in (2.1) Then every $\Phi^{(k)}$, $k \in \mathbb{N}_0$ in (3.1) satisfies the equation*

$$d\Phi_t^{(k)} = \lambda\left(m^{(k)} + \Phi_t^{(k)}\right) dt + \frac{1}{\mu} \Phi_{t-}^{(k+1)} (dN_t - \mu dt), \ t > 0, \qquad \Phi_0^{(k)} = \frac{\pi}{1-\pi} m^{(k)}. \tag{3.8}$$

Proof. For every $k \in \mathbb{N}_0$, let us introduce the function

$$F^{(k)}(t,x) \triangleq \int \left(\frac{v}{\mu}\right)^x (v-\mu)^k e^{-(v-\mu)t}\nu(dv), \qquad t \in \mathbb{R}_+, x \in \mathbb{R}. \tag{3.9}$$

The generalized Bayes theorem, (3.5), and the independence of the random variables θ, Λ and the process N under $\mathbb{P}_0$ imply

$$\begin{aligned}\Phi_t^{(k)} &= \frac{\mathbb{E}_0\left[(\Lambda-\mu)^k Z_t 1_{\{\theta\le t\}}|\mathcal{F}_t\right]}{(1-\Pi_t)\mathbb{E}_0[Z_t|\mathcal{F}_t]} = \frac{\mathbb{E}_0\left[(\Lambda-\mu)^k \left(L_t 1_{\{\theta=0\}} + \frac{L_t}{L_\theta}1_{\{0<\theta\le t\}}\right)|\mathcal{F}_t\right]}{(1-\pi)e^{-\lambda t}} \\ &= \frac{\pi e^{\lambda t}}{1-\pi}F^{(k)}(t,N_t) + \lambda\int_0^t e^{\lambda(t-s)}F^{(k)}(t-s,N_t-N_s)ds = U_t^{(k)} + V_t^{(k)}\end{aligned} \tag{3.10}$$

for every $k \in \mathbb{N}_0$ and $t \in \mathbb{R}_+$, where

$$U_t^{(k)} \triangleq \frac{\pi e^{\lambda t}}{1-\pi}F^{(k)}(t,N_t) \quad \text{and} \quad V_t^{(k)} \triangleq \lambda\int_0^t e^{\lambda(t-s)}F^{(k)}(t-s,N_t-N_s)ds. \tag{3.11}$$

Every $F^{(k)}(t,x)$, $k \in \mathbb{N}_0$ in (3.9) is continuously differentiable, and

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial t}F^{(k)}(t,x) = -F^{(k+1)}(t,x), \qquad t>0,\ x\in\mathbb{R},\ k\in\mathbb{N}_0. \tag{3.12}$$

The change of variable formula for jump processes gives

$$\begin{aligned}F^{(k)}(t,N_t) &= F^{(k)}(0,0) + \int_0^t \frac{\partial F^{(k)}}{\partial t}(s,N_s)ds + \int_0^t \frac{\partial F^{(k)}}{\partial x}(s,N_{s-})dN_s \\ &\qquad + \sum_{0<s\le t}\left[F^{(k)}(s,N_s) - F^{(k)}(s,N_{s-}) - \frac{\partial F^{(k)}}{\partial x}(s,N_{s-})\Delta N_s\right] \\ &= m^{(k)} - \int_0^t F^{(k+1)}(s,N_s)ds + \sum_{0<s\le t}\left[F^{(k)}(s,N_s) - F^{(k)}(s,N_{s-})\right],\end{aligned} \tag{3.13}$$

where $\Delta N_s \triangleq N_s - N_{s-} \in \{0,1\}$ for every $s>0$, and the last equality follows from (3.12),

$$F^{(k)}(0,0) = m^{(k)},\ k\in\mathbb{N}_0, \quad \text{and} \quad \int_0^t \frac{\partial F^{(k)}}{\partial x}(s,N_{s-})dN_s = \sum_{0<s\le t}\frac{\partial F^{(k)}}{\partial x}(s,N_{s-})\Delta N_s.$$

However, $F^{(k)}(s,N_s) - F^{(k)}(s,N_{s-})$ is equal to

$$\begin{aligned}&\int \left(\frac{v}{\mu}\right)^{N_{s-}+\Delta N_s}(v-\mu)^k e^{-(v-\mu)s}\nu(dv) - \int \left(\frac{v}{\mu}\right)^{N_{s-}}(v-\mu)^k e^{-(v-\mu)s}\nu(dv) \\ &\qquad = \int \left(\frac{v}{\mu}\right)^{N_{s-}}\left[\left(\frac{v}{\mu}\right)^{\Delta N_s} - 1\right](v-\mu)^k e^{-(v-\mu)t}\nu(dv) \\ &\qquad = \frac{\Delta N_s}{\mu}\int \left(\frac{v}{\mu}\right)^{N_{s-}}(v-\mu)^{k+1}e^{-(v-\mu)t}\nu(dv) = \frac{1}{\mu}F^{(k+1)}(s,N_{s-})\,\Delta N_s,\end{aligned}$$

since $[(v/\mu)^{\Delta N_s} - 1] = (\Delta N_s/\mu)(v-\mu)$. The last displayed equation and (3.13) imply

$$\begin{aligned} F^{(k)}(t, N_t) &= m^{(k)} - \int_0^t F^{(k+1)}(s, N_s) ds + \sum_{0<s\le t} \frac{1}{\mu}\, F^{(k+1)}(s, N_{s-})\, \Delta N_s \\ &= m^{(k)} + \int_0^t \frac{1}{\mu}\, F^{(k+1)}(s, N_{s-})(dN_s - \mu ds), \qquad t \in \mathbb{R}_+,\ k \in \mathbb{N}_0. \end{aligned} \tag{3.14}$$

This identity will help us derive the dynamics of $U^{(k)}$ and $V^{(k)}$ in (3.11). Note that

$$\begin{aligned} d\left(\frac{1-\pi}{\pi}\, U_t^{(k)}\right) &= d\left(e^{\lambda t} F^{(k)}(t, N_t)\right) = e^{\lambda t} F^{(k)}(t, N_t)\lambda dt + e^{\lambda t} dF^{(k)}(t, N_t) \\ &= \lambda \frac{1-\pi}{\pi}\, U_t^{(k)} dt + \frac{e^{\lambda t}}{\mu}\, F^{(k+1)}(t, N_{t-})(dN_t - \mu dt). \end{aligned}$$

Therefore,

$$dU_t^{(k)} = \lambda U_t^{(k)} + \frac{1}{\mu}\, U_t^{(k+1)}(dN_t - \mu dt), \quad t > 0, \qquad U_0^{(k)} = \frac{\pi}{1-\pi}\, m^{(k)}. \tag{3.15}$$

The derivation of the dynamics of $V^{(k)}$ is trickier. For every fixed $s \in [0, t)$, let us define $N_u^{(s)} \triangleq N_{s+u} - N_s$, $0 \le u \le t-s$. This is also a Poisson process under $\mathbb{P}_0$. As in (3.14),

$$F^{(k)}\left(t-s, N_{t-s}^{(s)}\right) = m^{(k)} + \int_0^{t-s} \frac{1}{\mu}\, F^{(k+1)}\left(u, N_{u-}^{(s)}\right)\left(dN_u^{(s)} - \mu du\right).$$

Changing the variable of integration and substituting $N_\bullet^{(s)} = N_{s+\bullet} - N_s$ into this equality gives

$$F^{(k)}(t-s, N_t - N_s) = m^{(k)} + \frac{1}{\mu} \int_s^t F^{(k+1)}(v-s, N_{v-} - N_s)(dN_v - \mu dv).$$

Let us plug this identity into $V_t^{(k)}$ in (3.11), multiply both sides by $e^{-\lambda t}$, and change the order of integration. Then

$$\begin{aligned} e^{-\lambda t} V_t^{(k)} &= \int_0^t \lambda e^{-\lambda s}\left(m^{(k)} + \frac{1}{\mu}\int_0^t F^{(k+1)}(v-s, N_{v-} - N_s)(dN_v - \mu dv)\right) ds \\ &= m^{(k)} \int_0^t \lambda e^{-\lambda s} ds + \frac{\lambda}{\mu}\int_0^t \left(\int_0^v e^{-\lambda s} F^{(k+1)}(v-s, N_v - N_s) ds\right)(dN_v - \mu dv) \\ &= m^{(k)} \int_0^t \lambda e^{-\lambda s} ds + \frac{1}{\mu}\int_0^t e^{-\lambda v} V_v^{(k+1)}(dN_v - \mu dv). \end{aligned}$$

Differentiating both sides and rearranging terms, we obtain

$$dV_t^{(k)} = \lambda\left(m^{(k)} + V_t^{(k)}\right) dt + \frac{1}{\mu}\, V_t^{(k+1)}(dN_t - \mu dt), \quad t > 0, \qquad V_0^{(k)} = 0. \tag{3.16}$$

Adding (3.15) and (3.16) as in (3.10) gives the dynamics (3.8) of the process $\Phi^{(k)}$. $\square$

Lemma 3.2 shows that the process $\Phi^{(0)}$ does not have the Markov property in general. This is because, as (3.8) shows, $\Phi^{(0)}$ depends on $\Phi^{(1)}$, then $\Phi^{(1)}$ depends on $\Phi^{(2)}$, and so on ad infinitum. However, a finite-dimensional sufficient Markovian statistic emerges if the system of stochastic differential equations in (3.8) is *closeable*, namely, if the process $\Phi^{(k)}$ can be expressed in terms of the processes $\Phi^{(0)}, \ldots, \Phi^{(k-1)}$, for some $k \in \mathbb{N}_0$. Our next corollary shows that this is true if Λ takes finitely many distinct values.

3.3. **Corollary.** *Suppose that* $\nu(\{\lambda_1, \cdots, \lambda_k\}) = 1$ *for some positive numbers* $\lambda_1, \ldots, \lambda_k$. *Consider the polynomial*

$$p(v) \triangleq \prod_{i=1}^{k}(v - \lambda_i + \mu) \equiv v^k + \sum_{i=0}^{k-1} c_i\, v^i, \qquad v \in \mathbb{R}$$

for suitable real numbers $c_0, \ldots, c_{k-1}$. *Then* $\left\{\Phi^{(0)}, \Phi^{(1)}, \cdots, \Phi^{(k-1)}\right\}$ *is a* k*-dimensional sufficient Markov statistic, with* $\Phi^{(k)} = -\sum_{i=0}^{k-1} c_i\, \Phi^{(i)}$.

Proof. Under the hypothesis, the random variable $p(\Lambda - \mu) = (\Lambda - \mu)^k + \sum_{i=0}^{k-1} c_i (\Lambda - \mu)^i$ is equal to zero almost surely. Therefore, (3.1) implies

$$\Phi_t^{(k)} + \sum_{i=0}^{k-1} c_i\, \Phi_t^{(i)} = \frac{\mathbb{E}\left[p(\Lambda - \mu) 1_{\{\theta \le t\}} | \mathcal{F}_t\right]}{1 - \Pi_t} = 0, \qquad \mathbb{P}\text{-a.s., for every } t \ge 0.$$

The process on the lefthand side has right-continuous sample paths, by (3.8). Therefore, $\Phi_t^{(k)} + \sum_{i=0}^{k-1} c_i\, \Phi_t^{(i)} = 0$ for all $t \in \mathbb{R}_+$ almost surely, i.e., the process $\Phi^{(k)}$ is a linear combination of the processes $\Phi^{(0)}, \ldots, \Phi^{(k-1)}$ outside a null set. □

In applications, one may construct an a prior distribution for the random variable Λ by using empirical distributions obtained from past data, if available, and/or from expert opinions in the field. Therefore, it is reasonable to expect that a prior distribution for Λ will typically be discrete with finite support. In such a case, we can set up the detection problem in the form of an optimal stopping problem for a finite-dimensional Markov process, thanks to Corollary 3.3. In the remainder of the paper, we shall study the case where the arrival rate of the observations after the disorder has a Bernoulli prior distribution.

4. Poisson disorder problem with a Bernoulli post-disorder arrival rate

We shall assume henceforth $\mu > 1$ and that the random variable Λ has Bernoulli distribution

$$\nu(\{\mu - 1, \mu + 1\}) = 1. \tag{4.1}$$

Namely, the rate of the Poisson process N is expected to increase or decrease by one unit after the disorder. Corollary 3.3 implies that $\Phi^{(2)} = \Phi^{(0)}$, and the sufficient statistic $(\Phi^{(0)}, \Phi^{(1)})$ is a Markov process. According to Lemma 3.2, the pair satisfies

$$d\Phi_t^{(0)} = \lambda\left(1 + \Phi_t^{(0)}\right) dt + \frac{1}{\mu}\,\Phi_{t-}^{(1)}(dN_t - \mu dt), \qquad \Phi_0^{(0)} = \frac{\pi}{1-\pi}, \tag{4.2}$$

$$d\Phi_t^{(1)} = \lambda\left(m + \Phi_t^{(1)}\right) dt + \frac{1}{\mu}\,\Phi_{t-}^{(0)}(dN_t - \mu dt), \qquad \Phi_0^{(1)} = \frac{\pi}{1-\pi}\,m, \tag{4.3}$$

where, as in (2.1), we set

$$m \equiv m^{(1)} = \mathbb{E}_0[\Lambda - \mu] = \mathbb{P}\{\Lambda = \mu + 1\} - \mathbb{P}\{\Lambda = \mu - 1\}. \tag{4.4}$$

The dynamics of the processes $\Phi^{(0)}$ and $\Phi^{(1)}$ in (4.2) and (4.3) are interdependent. However, if we define a new process

$$\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Phi}} \equiv \begin{bmatrix} \widetilde{\Phi}^{(0)} \\ \widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)} \end{bmatrix} \triangleq \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} \begin{bmatrix} \Phi^{(0)} - \Phi^{(1)} \\ \Phi^{(0)} + \Phi^{(1)} \end{bmatrix}, \tag{4.5}$$

then each of the new processes $\widetilde{\Phi}^{(0)}$ and $\widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)}$ is autonomous:

$$\begin{aligned} d\widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(0)} &= \left[(\lambda+1)\widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(0)} + \frac{\lambda(1-m)}{\sqrt{2}}\right] dt - \frac{1}{\mu}\,\widetilde{\Phi}_{t-}^{(0)} dN_t, \quad \widetilde{\Phi}_0^{(0)} = \frac{(1-m)\pi}{\sqrt{2}(1-\pi)}, \\ d\widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(1)} &= \left[(\lambda-1)\widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(1)} + \frac{\lambda(1+m)}{\sqrt{2}}\right] dt + \frac{1}{\mu}\,\widetilde{\Phi}_{t-}^{(1)} dN_t, \quad \widetilde{\Phi}_0^{(1)} = \frac{(1+m)\pi}{\sqrt{2}(1-\pi)}. \end{aligned} \tag{4.6}$$

The new coordinates $\widetilde{\Phi}^{(0)}$ and $\widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)}$ are in fact the conditional *odds-ratio* processes as in

$$\widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(0)} = \sqrt{2}\cdot\frac{\mathbb{P}\{\Lambda = \mu - 1, \theta \le t | \mathcal{F}_t\}}{\mathbb{P}\{\theta > t | \mathcal{F}_t\}} \qquad \text{and} \qquad \widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(1)} = \sqrt{2}\cdot\frac{\mathbb{P}\{\Lambda = \mu + 1, \theta \le t | \mathcal{F}_t\}}{\mathbb{P}\{\theta > t | \mathcal{F}_t\}}.$$

Therefore, both $\widetilde{\Phi}^{(0)}$ and $\widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)}$ are nonnegative processes.

Note that $m \in [-1, 1]$ in (4.4). The cases $m = \pm 1$ degenerate to Poisson disorder problems with *known* post-disorder rates, and were studied by Bayraktar, Dayanik, and Karatzas (2004b). Therefore, we will assume that $m \in (-1, 1)$ in the remainder.

4.1. **Remark.** For every $\phi_0 \in \mathbb{R}$ and $\phi_1 \in \mathbb{R}$, let us denote by $x(t, \phi_0)$, $t \in \mathbb{R}$ and $y(t, \phi_1)$, $t \in \mathbb{R}$ the solutions of the differential equations

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{d}{dt}x(t,\phi_0) &= (\lambda+1)x(t,\phi_0) + \frac{\lambda(1-m)}{\sqrt{2}}, \qquad x(0,\phi_0) = \phi_0, \\ \frac{d}{dt}y(t,\phi_1) &= (\lambda-1)y(t,\phi_1) + \frac{\lambda(1+m)}{\sqrt{2}}, \qquad y(0,\phi_1) = \phi_1, \end{aligned} \tag{4.7}$$

respectively. These solutions are given by

$$
(4.8)\quad \begin{aligned}
x(t,\phi_0) &= -\frac{\lambda(1-m)}{\sqrt{2}(\lambda+1)} + e^{(\lambda+1)t}\left[\phi_0 + \frac{\lambda(1-m)}{\sqrt{2}(\lambda+1)}\right], \qquad t\in\mathbb{R},\\
y(t,\phi_1) &= \left\{\begin{array}{ll} -\dfrac{\lambda(1+m)}{\sqrt{2}(\lambda-1)} + e^{(\lambda-1)t}\left[\phi_1 + \dfrac{\lambda(1+m)}{\sqrt{2}(\lambda-1)}\right], & \lambda\neq 1\\ \phi_1 + \dfrac{1+m}{\sqrt{2}}t, & \lambda = 1\end{array}\right\}, \quad t\in\mathbb{R}.
\end{aligned}
$$

Both $x(\cdot,\phi_0)$ and $y(\cdot,\phi_1)$ have the semi-group property, i.e., for every $t\in\mathbb{R}$ and $s\in\mathbb{R}$

$$
(4.9)\qquad x(t+s,\phi_0) = x(s, x(t,\phi_0)) \quad \text{and} \quad y(t+s,\phi_1) = y(s, y(t,\phi_1)).
$$

Note from (4.6) and (4.7) that

$$
(4.10)\quad \widetilde{\Phi}^{(0)}_t = x\left(t-\sigma_n, \widetilde{\Phi}^{(0)}_{\sigma_n}\right) \quad \text{and} \quad \widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)}_t = y\left(t-\sigma_n, \widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)}_{\sigma_n}\right), \qquad \sigma_n \le t < \sigma_{n+1},\ n\in\mathbb{N}_0.
$$

4.1. **An optimal stopping problem for the quickest detection of the Poisson disorder.** In terms of the new sufficient statistics $\widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)}$ and $\widetilde{\Phi}^{(0)}$ in (4.5, 4.6), the Bayes risk of (2.6, 3.2) can be rewritten as

$$
R_\tau(\pi) = 1-\pi + \frac{c(1-\pi)}{\sqrt{2}}\cdot \mathbb{E}_0\left[\int_0^\tau e^{-\lambda t}\left(\widetilde{\Phi}^{(0)}_t + \widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)}_t - \frac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2}\right)dt\right], \qquad \tau\in\mathcal{S}.
$$

Therefore, the *minimum Bayes risk* $U(\pi) \triangleq \inf_{\tau\in\mathcal{S}} R_\tau(\pi)$, $\pi\in[0,1)$ is given by

$$
(4.11)\qquad U(\pi) = 1-\pi + \frac{c(1-\pi)}{\sqrt{2}}\cdot V\left(\frac{(1-m)\pi}{\sqrt{2}(1-\pi)}, \frac{(1+m)\pi}{\sqrt{2}(1-\pi)}\right), \quad \pi\in[0,1),
$$

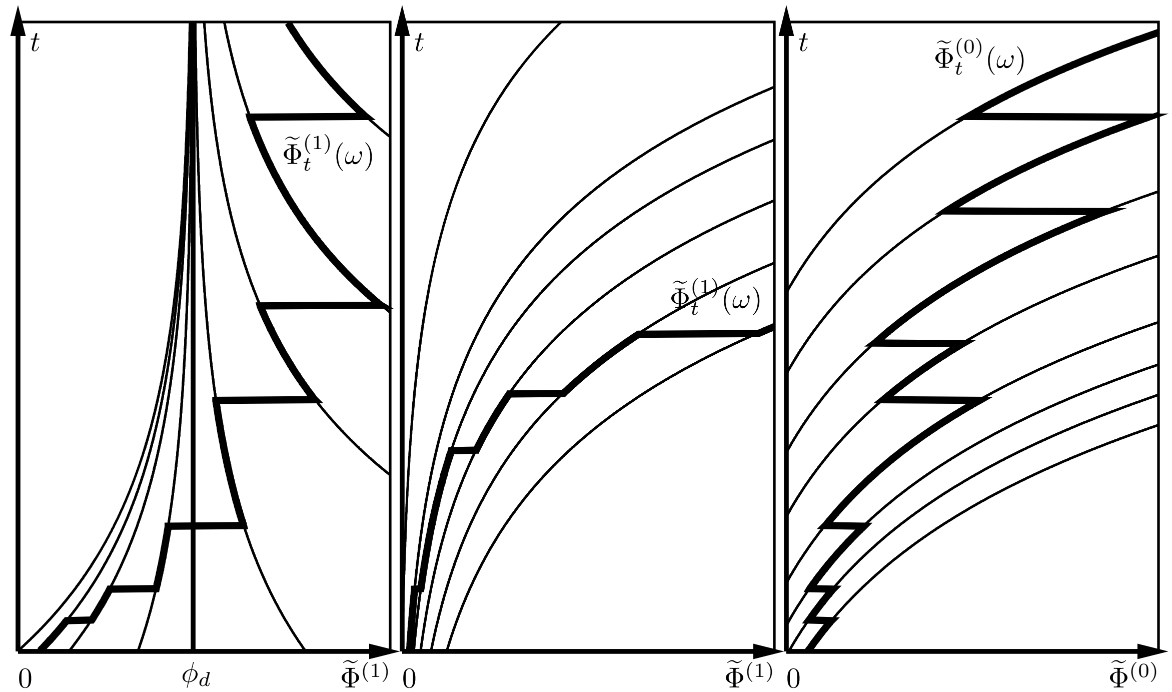
where m is as in (4.4), the function $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ is the value function of the optimal stopping problem

$$
(4.12)\quad \begin{aligned}
V(\phi_0,\phi_1) &\triangleq \inf_{\tau\in\mathcal{S}} \mathbb{E}^{\phi_0,\phi_1}_0\left[\int_0^\tau e^{-\lambda t} g\left(\widetilde{\Phi}^{(0)}_t, \widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)}_t\right)dt\right],\\
g(\phi_0,\phi_1) &\triangleq \phi_0+\phi_1 - \frac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2}, \qquad (\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}^2_+,
\end{aligned}
$$

and $\mathbb{E}^{\phi_0,\phi_1}_0$ is the conditional $\mathbb{P}_0$-expectation given that $\widetilde{\Phi}^{(0)}_0 = \phi_0$ and $\widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)}_0 = \phi_1$. Moreover, an optimal stopping time for (4.12) is a minimum Bayes alarm time.

It is clear from (4.12) that it is never optimal to stop before the process $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}$ leaves the region

$$
(4.13)\qquad \mathbf{C}_0 \triangleq \left\{(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}^2_+ :\ \phi_0+\phi_1 < \frac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2}\right\}.
$$



(a) $\widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)}$ with $0 < \lambda < 1$ (b) $\widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)}$ with $\lambda \geq 1$ (c) $\widetilde{\Phi}^{(0)}$ with $\lambda > 0$

FIGURE 1. The sample-paths of the processes $\widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)}$ and $\widetilde{\Phi}^{(0)}$.

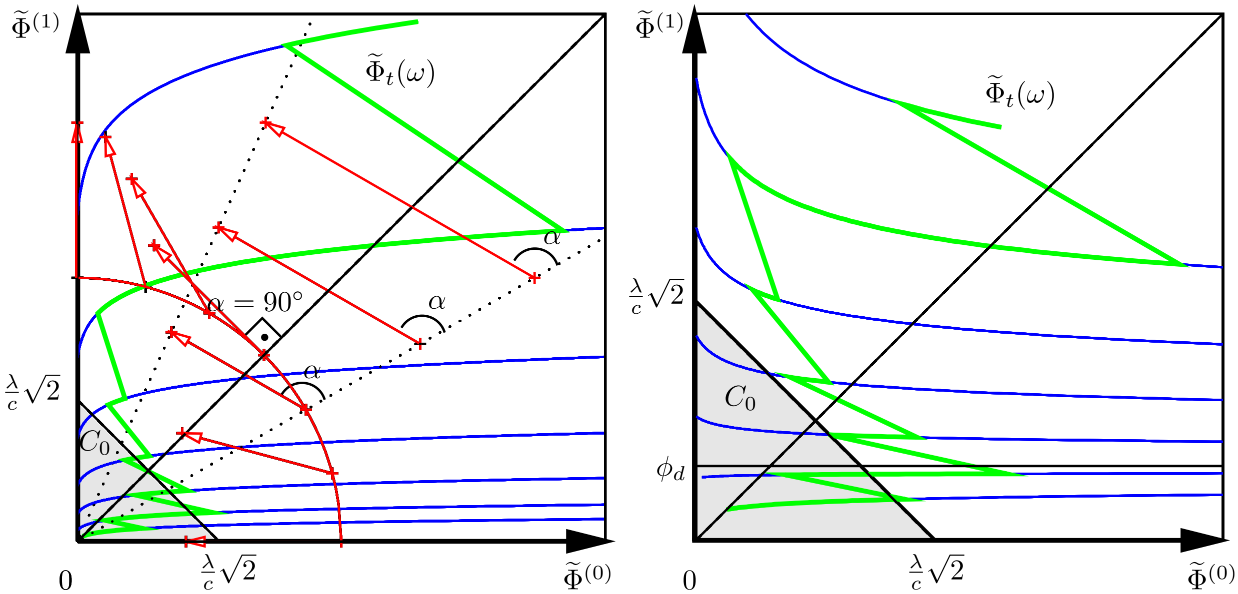
In the next subsection we shall discuss the pathwise behavior of the process $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}$; this will give insight into the solution of the optimal stopping problem in (4.12).

4.2. **The sample-paths of the sufficient-statistic process $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}} = (\widetilde{\Phi}^{(0)}, \widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)})$.** The process $\widetilde{\Phi}^{(0)}$ jumps downwards and increases between jumps; see (4.6) and Figure 1(c). On the other hand, the process $\widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)}$ jumps upwards, and its behavior between jumps depends on the sign of $1-\lambda$. If $\lambda \geq 1$, then the process $\widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)}$ increases between jumps; see Figure 1(b). If $0 < \lambda < 1$, then $\widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)}$ reverts to the (positive) "mean-level"

$$\phi_d \triangleq \frac{\lambda(1+m)}{(1-\lambda)\sqrt{2}} \tag{4.14}$$

between jumps; it never visits ϕ_d unless it starts there; and in this latter case, it stays at ϕ_d until the first jump and never comes back to ϕ_d later (i.e., $\phi_d > 0$ is an entrance boundary for $\widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)}$); see Figure 1(a). Finally, note that ϕ_d and $1-\lambda \neq 0$ have the same signs.

As for the solution of the optimal stopping problem in (4.12), it is worth waiting if the process $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}$ is in the region $\mathbf{C}_0$ of (4.13), or is likely to return to $\mathbf{C}_0$ shortly. The sample-paths of the process $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}$ are deterministic between jumps, and tend towards, or away from, the region



(a) Case I: $\lambda \geq 1$ or $0 < (\lambda/c)\sqrt{2} \leq \phi_d$ (b) Case II: $0 < \phi_d < (\lambda/c)\sqrt{2}$

FIGURE 2. The sample-paths of $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Phi}}$

$\mathbf{C}_0$. These two cases are described separately below. In both cases, however, the process $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Phi}}$ jumps in the same direction relative to its position before the jump. A jump at (ϕ_0, ϕ_1) is an instantaneous displacement $(1/\mu)[-\phi_0 \quad \phi_1]^{\mathrm{T}}$ in $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Phi}}$. Therefore, the jump direction is away from (respectively, towards) the region $\mathbf{C}_0$ if $\phi_0 < \phi_1$ (respectively, $\phi_0 > \phi_1$). Along a quarter of a circle in Figure 2(a), the directions of jumps at an equal distance from the origin are illustrated by the arrows. Note also that, along any fixed half-ray in $\mathbb{R}^2_+$, the jump direction (namely, the angle α in Figure 2(a)) does not change, but the size of the jump does.

4.3. **Case I: A "large" disorder arrival rate.** Suppose that $\lambda \geq 1$ or $0 < (\lambda/c)\sqrt{2} \leq \phi_d$. Equivalently, $\lambda \geq [1-(1+m)(c/2)]^+$ is "large". Between jumps, the process $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Phi}}$ gets farther away from the region $\mathbf{C}_0$. It may return to $\mathbf{C}_0$ by jumps only, and only if the jump originates in the region $L \triangleq \{(\phi_0, \phi_1) : \phi_0 > \phi_1\}$; see Figure 2(a). But, if $\widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)}$ reaches at or above $(\lambda/c)\sqrt{2}$, then $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Phi}}$ will never return to $\mathbf{C}_0$.

4.4. **Case II: A "small" disorder arrival rate.** Now suppose that $0 < \phi_d < (\lambda/c)\sqrt{2}$. Equivalently, $0 < \lambda < 1-(1+m)(c/2)$ is "small". If the process $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Phi}}$ finds itself in a very close neighborhood of the upper-left corner of the triangular region $\mathbf{C}_0$, then it will drift into $\mathbf{C}_0$

before the next jump with positive probability. Otherwise, the behavior of the sample-paths of $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Phi}}$ relative to $\mathbf{C}_0$ is very similar to that in Case I; see Figure 2(b).

5. A family of related optimal stopping problems

Let us introduce the family of optimal stopping problems

$$V_n(\phi_0,\phi_1) \triangleq \inf_{\tau\in\mathcal{S}} \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{\tau\wedge\sigma_n} e^{-\lambda t} g\left(\widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(0)},\widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(1)}\right) dt\right], \quad (\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}_+^2,\ n\in\mathbb{N}, \tag{5.1}$$

obtained from (4.12) by stopping the process $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Phi}}$ at the nth jump time σ_n of the process N. Since $g(\cdot,\cdot)$ in (4.12) is bounded from below by the constant $-(\lambda/c)\sqrt{2}$, the expectation in (5.1) is well-defined for every stopping time $\tau\in\mathcal{S}$. In fact, $-\sqrt{2}/c\le V_n\le 0$ for every $n\in\mathbb{N}$. Since the sequence $(\sigma_n)_{n\ge1}$ of jump times of the process N is increasing almost surely, the sequence $(V_n)_{n\ge1}$ is decreasing. Therefore, $\lim_{n\to\infty} V_n$ exists everywhere. It is also obvious that $V_n\ge V$, $n\in\mathbb{N}$.

5.1. **Proposition.** *As $n\to\infty$, the sequence $V_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ converges to $V(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ uniformly in $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}_+^2$. In fact, for every $n\in\mathbb{N}$ and $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}_+^2$, we have*

$$\frac{\sqrt{2}}{c}\cdot\left(\frac{\mu}{\lambda+\mu}\right)^n \ge V_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)-V(\phi_0,\phi_1)\ge 0. \tag{5.2}$$

Proof. Let us fix $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}_+^2$. For every $\tau\in\mathcal{S}$ and $n\in\mathbb{N}$, we have

$$\begin{aligned}
\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{\tau} e^{-\lambda s} g(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Phi}}_s)ds\right] &= \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{\tau\wedge\sigma_n} e^{-\lambda s} g(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Phi}}_s)ds\right] + \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[1_{\{\tau\ge\sigma_n\}}\int_{\sigma_n}^{\tau} e^{-\lambda s} g(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Phi}}_s)ds\right]\\
&\ge \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{\tau\wedge\sigma_n} e^{-\lambda s} g(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Phi}}_s)ds\right] - \frac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2}\cdot\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[1_{\{\tau\ge\sigma_n\}}\int_{\sigma_n}^{\tau} e^{-\lambda s}ds\right]\\
&\ge \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{\tau\wedge\sigma_n} e^{-\lambda s} g(\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Phi}}_s)ds\right] - \frac{\sqrt{2}}{c}\cdot\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[e^{-\lambda\sigma_n}\right] \ge V_n(\phi_0,\phi_1) - \frac{\sqrt{2}}{c}\cdot\left(\frac{\mu}{\lambda+\mu}\right)^n
\end{aligned}$$

We have used the bound $g(\phi_0,\phi_1)\ge-(\lambda/c)\sqrt{2}$ from (4.12), as well as the fact that N is a Poisson process with rate μ under $\mathbb{P}_0$, and σ_n is the n-th jump time of N. Taking the infimum over $\tau\in\mathcal{S}$ gives the first inequality in (5.2). □

We shall try to calculate now the functions $V_n(\cdot)$ of (5.1), following a method of Gugerli (1986) and Davis (1993). Let us start by defining on the collection of bounded Borel functions

$w : \mathbb{R}_+^2 \mapsto \mathbb{R}$ the operators

$$(5.3)\qquad Jw(t,\phi_0,\phi_1) \triangleq \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{t\wedge\sigma_1} e^{-\lambda u} g\left(\widetilde{\Phi}_u^{(0)},\widetilde{\Phi}_u^{(1)}\right)du + 1_{\{t\geq\sigma_1\}}e^{-\lambda\sigma_1}w\left(\widetilde{\Phi}_{\sigma_1}^{(0)},\widetilde{\Phi}_{\sigma_1}^{(1)}\right)\right],$$

$$(5.4)\qquad J_t w(\phi_0,\phi_1) \triangleq \inf_{u\in[t,\infty]} Jw(u,\phi_0,\phi_1) \qquad \text{for every } t\in[0,\infty].$$

The special structure of the stopping times of jump processes (see Lemma 7.1 below) implies

$$(5.5)\quad J_0 w(\phi_0,\phi_1) = \inf_{\tau\in\mathcal{S}} \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{\tau\wedge\sigma_1} e^{-\lambda t} g\left(\widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(0)},\widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(1)}\right)dt + 1_{\{\tau\geq\sigma_1\}}e^{-\lambda\sigma_1}w\left(\widetilde{\Phi}_{\sigma_1}^{(0)},\widetilde{\Phi}_{\sigma_1}^{(1)}\right)\right].$$

By relying on the strong Markov property of the process N at its first jump time σ_1, one expects that the value function V of (4.12) satisfies the equation $V = J_0 V$. Below, we show that this is indeed the case. In fact, if we define $v_n : \mathbb{R}_+^2 \mapsto \mathbb{R}$, $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$ sequentially by

$$(5.6)\qquad v_0 \equiv 0, \quad \text{and} \quad v_n \triangleq J_0 v_{n-1} \quad \forall\, n\in\mathbb{N},$$

then every v_n is bounded and identical to V_n of (5.1), $\lim_{n\to\infty} v_n$ exists and equals the value function V in (4.12).

Under $\mathbb{P}_0$, the first jump time σ_1 of the process N has exponential distribution with rate μ. Using the Fubini theorem and (4.10), we can write (5.3) as

$$(5.7)\qquad Jw(t,\phi_0,\phi_1) = \int_0^t e^{-(\lambda+\mu)u}\big(g+\mu\cdot w\circ S\big)\big(x(u,\phi_0),y(u,\phi_1)\big)du, \quad t\in[0,\infty],$$

where $x(\cdot,\phi_0)$ and $y(\cdot,\phi_1)$ are the solutions (4.8) of the ordinary differential equations in (4.7), and $S : \mathbb{R}_+^2 \mapsto \mathbb{R}_+^2$ is the linear mapping

$$(5.8)\qquad S(\phi_0,\phi_1) \triangleq \left(\left(1-\frac{1}{\mu}\right)\phi_0, \left(1+\frac{1}{\mu}\right)\phi_1\right).$$

5.2. **Remark.** Using $\mu > 1$ and the explicit forms of $x(u,\phi_0)$ and $y(u,\phi_1)$ in (4.8), it is easy to check that the integrand in (5.7) is absolutely integrable on $\mathbb{R}_+$. Therefore,

$$\lim_{t\to\infty} Jw(t,\phi_0,\phi_1) = Jw(\infty,\phi_0,\phi_1) < \infty,$$

and the mapping $t \mapsto Jw(t,\phi_0,\phi_1) : [0,\infty] \mapsto \mathbb{R}$ is continuous. The infimum $J_t w(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ in (5.4) is attained for every $t\in[0,\infty]$.

5.3. **Lemma.** *For every bounded Borel function $w : \mathbb{R}_+^2 \mapsto \mathbb{R}$, the mapping $J_0 w$ is bounded. If we define $||w|| \triangleq \sup_{(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}_+^2} |w(\phi_0,\phi_1)| < \infty$, then*

$$(5.9)\qquad -\left(\frac{\lambda}{\lambda+\mu}\cdot\frac{\sqrt{2}}{c} + \frac{\mu}{\lambda+\mu}\cdot||w||\right) \leq J_0 w(\phi_0,\phi_1) \leq 0, \qquad (\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}_+^2.$$

If the function $w(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ is concave, then so is $J_0 w(\phi_0,\phi_1)$. If $w_1 \le w_2$ are real-valued and bounded Borel functions defined on $\mathbb{R}_+^2$, then $J_0 w_1 \le J_0 w_2$.

5.4. **Corollary.** *Every v_n, $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$ in (5.6) is bounded and concave, and $-\sqrt{2}/c \le \ldots \le v_n \le v_{n-1} \le v_1 \le v_0 \equiv 0$. The limit*

$$v(\phi_0,\phi_1) \triangleq \lim_{n\to\infty} v_n(\phi_0,\phi_1), \quad (\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 \tag{5.10}$$

exists, and is also bounded and concave.

Both $v_n : \mathbb{R}_+^2 \mapsto \mathbb{R}$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $v : \mathbb{R}_+^2 \mapsto \mathbb{R}$ are continuous, increasing in each of their arguments, and their left and right partial derivatives are bounded on every compact subset of $\mathbb{R}_+^2$.

5.5. **Proposition.** *For every $n \in \mathbb{N}$, the functions v_n of (5.6) and V_n of (5.1) coincide. For every $\varepsilon \ge 0$, let*

$$r_n^\varepsilon(\phi_0,\phi_1) \triangleq \inf\left\{s \in (0,\infty] : Jv_n\big(s,\phi_0,\phi_1\big) \le J_0 v_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)+\varepsilon\right\}, \quad n \in \mathbb{N}_0,\ (\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2,$$

$$S_1^\varepsilon \triangleq r_0^\varepsilon\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_0\big) \wedge \sigma_1, \quad \text{and} \quad S_{n+1}^\varepsilon \triangleq \begin{Bmatrix} r_n^{\varepsilon/2}\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_0\big), & \text{if } \sigma_1 > r_n^{\varepsilon/2}\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_0\big) \\ \sigma_1 + S_n^{\varepsilon/2}\circ\theta_{\sigma_1}, & \text{if } \sigma_1 \le r_n^{\varepsilon/2}\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_0\big) \end{Bmatrix}, \quad n \in \mathbb{N},$$

where θ_s is the shift-operator on Ω: $N_t \circ \theta_s = N_{s+t}$. Then

$$\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{S_n^\varepsilon} e^{-\lambda t} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t\big)dt\right] \le v_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)+\varepsilon, \quad \forall\, n \in \mathbb{N},\ \forall\, \varepsilon \ge 0. \tag{5.11}$$

5.6. **Proposition.** *We have $v(\phi_0,\phi_1) = V(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ for every $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2$. Moreover, V is the largest nonpositive solution U of the equation $U = J_0 U$.*

5.7. **Lemma.** *Let $w : \mathbb{R}_+^2 \mapsto \mathbb{R}$ be a bounded function. For every $t \in \mathbb{R}_+$ and $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2$,*

$$J_t w(\phi_0,\phi_1) = Jw(t,\phi_0,\phi_1) + e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t}\, J_0 w\big(x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1)\big). \tag{5.12}$$

5.8. **Corollary.** *Let*

$$r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1) = \inf\left\{s \in (0,\infty] : Jv_n\big(s,(\phi_0,\phi_1)\big) = J_0 v_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)\right\} \tag{5.13}$$

be the same as $r_n^\varepsilon(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ in Proposition 5.5 with $\varepsilon = 0$. Then

$$r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1) = \inf\left\{t > 0 : v_{n+1}\big(x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1)\big) = 0\right\} \qquad (\inf\varnothing \equiv \infty). \tag{5.14}$$

Proof. Let us fix $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2$, and denote $r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ by r_n. By Remark 5.2, we have $Jv_n(r_n,\phi_0,\phi_1) = J_0 v_n(\phi_0,\phi_1) = J_{r_n} v_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)$.

Suppose first that $r_n < \infty$. Since $J_0 v_n = v_{n+1}$, taking $t = r_n$ and $w = v_n$ in (5.7) gives

$$Jv_n(r_n,\phi_0,\phi_1) = J_{r_n}v_n(\phi_0,\phi_1) = Jv_n(r_n,\phi_0,\phi_1) + e^{-(\lambda+\mu)r_n} v_{n+1}(x(r_n,\phi_0), y(r_n,\phi_1)).$$

Therefore, $v_{n+1}(x(r_n,\phi_0), y(r_n,\phi_1)) = 0$.

If $0 < t < r_n$, then $Jv_n(t,\phi_0,\phi_1) > J_0 v_n(\phi_0,\phi_1) = J_{r_n}v_n(\phi_0,\phi_1) = J_t v_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ since $u \mapsto J_u v_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ is nondecreasing. Taking $t \in (0, r_n)$ and $w = v_n$ in (5.7) imply

$$J_0 v_n(\phi_0,\phi_1) = J_t v_n(\phi_0,\phi_1) = Jv_n(t,\phi_0,\phi_1) + e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t} v_{n+1}(x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1)).$$

Therefore, $v_{n+1}(x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1)) < 0$ for every $t \in (0, r_n)$, and (5.14) follows.

Suppose now that $r_n = \infty$. Then we have $v_{n+1}(x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1)) < 0$ for every $t \in (0,\infty)$ by the same argument in the last paragraph above. Hence, $\{t > 0 : v_{n+1}(x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1)) = 0\} = \varnothing$, and (5.14) still holds. $\square$

5.9. **Remark.** For every $t \in [0, r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)]$, we have $J_t v_n(\phi_0,\phi_1) = J_0 v_n(\phi_0,\phi_1) = v_{n+1}(\phi_0,\phi_1)$. Then substituting $w(\cdot,\cdot) = v_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ in (5.12) gives the *dynamic programming equation* for the family $\{v_k(\cdot,\cdot)\}_{k\in\mathbb{N}_0}$: for every $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2$ and $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$

$$v_{n+1}(\phi_0,\phi_1) = Jv_n(t,\phi_0,\phi_1) + e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t} v_{n+1}(x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1)), \quad t \in [0, r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)]. \tag{5.15}$$

5.10. **Remark** (Dynamic Programming Equation for $V(\cdot,\cdot)$)**.** Since $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ is bounded, and $V = J_0 V$ by Proposition 5.6, Lemma 5.7 gives

$$J_t V(\phi_0,\phi_1) = JV(t,\phi_0,\phi_1) + e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t}\, V\big(x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1)\big), \quad t \in \mathbb{R}_+ \tag{5.16}$$

for every $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2$; and if we define

$$r(\phi_0,\phi_1) \triangleq \inf\{t > 0 : JV(t,\phi_0,\phi_1) = J_0 V(\phi_0,\phi_1)\}, \qquad (\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2, \tag{5.17}$$

then arguments similar to those in the proof of Corollary 5.8, and (5.16), give

$$r(\phi_0,\phi_1) = \inf\{t > 0 : V(x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1)) = 0\}, \qquad (\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2, \tag{5.18}$$

as well as the Dynamic Programming equation

$$V(\phi_0,\phi_1) = JV(t,\phi_0,\phi_1) + e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t} V(x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1)), \quad t \in [0, r(\phi_0,\phi_1)] \tag{5.19}$$

for the function $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ of (4.12). Because $t \mapsto Jw(t,(\phi_0,\phi_1))$ and $t \mapsto J_t w(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ are continuous for every bounded $w : \mathbb{R}_+^2 \mapsto \mathbb{R}$ (see, e.g., (5.7)), the identity (5.16) implies that $t \mapsto V(x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1))$ is continuous. Therefore, every realization of $t \mapsto V(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t)$ is right-continuous and has left-limits.

Let us define the $\mathbb{F}$-stopping times

$$U_\varepsilon \triangleq \inf\{t \geq 0 : V(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t) \geq -\varepsilon\}, \qquad \varepsilon \geq 0. \tag{5.20}$$

By Remark 5.10, we have

$$V\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_{U_\varepsilon}\big) \geq -\varepsilon \quad \text{on the event} \quad \{U_\varepsilon < \infty\}\,. \tag{5.21}$$

5.11. **Proposition.** *Let $M_t \triangleq e^{-\lambda t} V(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t) + \int_0^t e^{-\lambda s} g(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s) ds$, $t \geq 0$. For every $n \in \mathbb{N}$, $\varepsilon \geq 0$, and $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2$, we have $\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}[M_0] = \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}[M_{U_\varepsilon \wedge \sigma_n}]$, i.e.,*

$$V(\phi_0, \phi_1) = \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[e^{-\lambda(U_\varepsilon \wedge \sigma_n)} V(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_{U_\varepsilon \wedge \sigma_n}) + \int_0^{U_\varepsilon \wedge \sigma_n} e^{-\lambda s} g(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s) ds\right]. \tag{5.22}$$

5.12. **Proposition.** *For every $\varepsilon \geq 0$, the stopping time U_ε in (5.20) is ε-optimal for the problem (4.12), i.e.,*

$$\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{U_\varepsilon} e^{-\lambda s} g(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s) ds\right] \leq V(\phi_0, \phi_1) + \varepsilon, \quad \textit{for every} \quad (\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2.$$

Proposition 5.5 above shows how we can calculate the V_n's sequentially; it also identifies explicitly ε-optimal times for every optimal stopping problem in (5.1). Together with Proposition 5.1, it suggests a way to calculate ε-optimal alarm times: Let $\varepsilon_1 > 0$ and $\varepsilon_2 \geq 0$ be two arbitrary numbers such that $\varepsilon_1 + \varepsilon_2 = \varepsilon > 0$. Let us choose $n \in \mathbb{N}$ such that

$$\frac{\sqrt{2}}{c} \cdot \left(\frac{\mu}{\lambda + \mu}\right)^n < \varepsilon_1. \tag{5.23}$$

Then we have $V_n(\phi_0, \phi_1) - \varepsilon_1 \leq V(\phi_0, \phi_1) \leq V_n(\phi_0, \phi_1)$ for every $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2$, and the stopping time $S_n^{\varepsilon_2}$ of Proposition 5.5 is an ε-optimal stopping time for our original optimal stopping problem (4.12) in the sense that

$$V(\phi_0, \phi_1) \leq \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{S_n^{\varepsilon_2}} e^{-\lambda t} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t\big) dt\right] < V(\phi_0, \phi_1) + \varepsilon, \quad (\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2.$$

Since $n \in \mathbb{N}$ satisfies (5.23), and $S_n^{\varepsilon_2}(\omega) \leq \sigma_n(\omega)$ for all $\omega \in \Omega$, setting the alarm at the nth jump of the process N (if this has not been triggered by $S_n^{\varepsilon_2}(\omega)$ earlier) is not in error more than ε.

In this section, we showed that the (more classical) stopping times U_ε of (5.20) are also ε-optimal for (4.12); especially the stopping time U_0 is optimal, see Proposition 5.12.

6. A bound on the alarm time

We shall show that the optimal continuation region $\mathbf{C} = \{(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : V(\phi_0, \phi_1) < 0\}$ is contained in some set

$$D = \{(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : \phi_0 + \phi_1 < \xi^*\} \quad \text{for a suitable } \xi^* \in \left[\frac{\lambda + \mu}{c}\sqrt{2}, \infty\right). \tag{6.1}$$

Therefore, the region $\mathbf{C}$ has compact closure; this will be very useful in proving in the next section that $\mathbf{C}$ has a strictly decreasing convex boundary.

Recall from Section 4.1 that it is not optimal to stop before the process $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}$ leaves the region $\mathbf{C}_0$ in (4.13). Thus the optimal stopping time U_0 of Proposition 5.12 is bounded by

$$\tau_{C_0} \triangleq \inf\left\{t \geq 0 : \widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(0)} + \widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(1)} \geq \frac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2}\right\} \leq U_0 \leq \tau_D \triangleq \inf\{t \geq 0 : \widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(0)} + \widetilde{\Phi}_t^{(1)} \geq \xi^*\} \tag{6.2}$$

the exit times τ_{C_0} and τ_D of the process $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}$ from the regions C_0 and D, respectively. The constant threshold ξ^* in (6.1) is essentially determined by the number $(\lambda + \mu)\sqrt{2}/c$ (see (6.5), (6.9) and (6.11)), and our calculations below suggest that they are close. Therefore, the bounds in (6.2) may prove useful in practice. The difference $[(\lambda + \mu)/c]\sqrt{2} - (\lambda/c)\sqrt{2} = (\mu/c)\sqrt{2}$ between the thresholds that determine the latest and the earliest alarm times is also meaningful. It increases as μ/c increases: waiting longer is encouraged if the new information arrives at a higher rate than we pay for detection delay per unit time when the disorder has already happened.

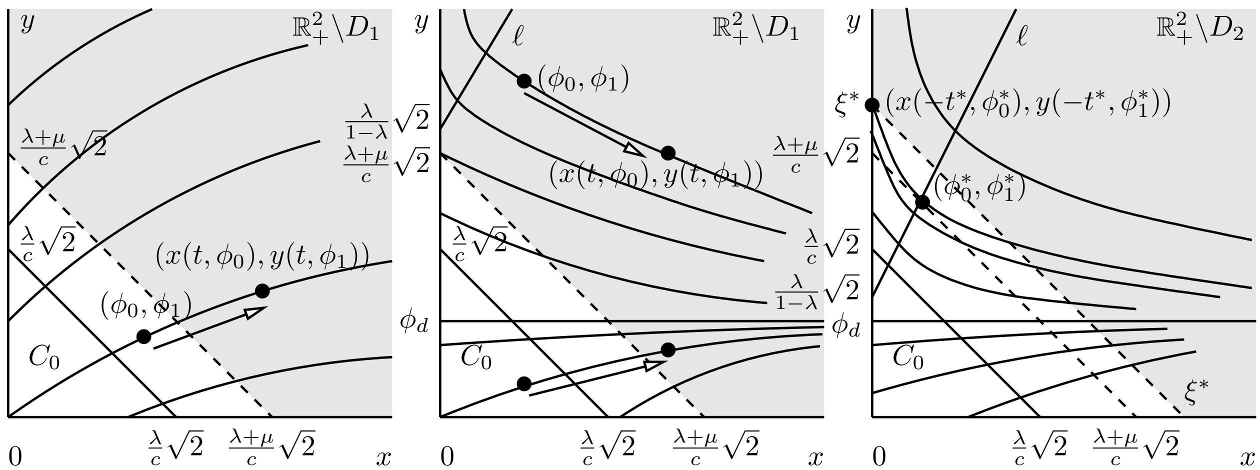
Finally, we prove in Lemma 6.1 that τ_D in (6.2) has finite expectation. Therefore,

$$\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}[U_0] \leq \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}[\tau_D] < \infty \qquad \text{for every } (\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2.$$

Let $\tau \in \mathcal{S}$ be any $\mathbb{F}$-stopping time. By Lemma 7.1, there is a constant $t \geq 0$ such that $\tau \wedge \sigma_1 = t \wedge \sigma_1$ almost surely. Therefore

$$\begin{aligned}
\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}&\left[\int_0^\tau e^{-\lambda s} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s\big)ds\right] \\
&= \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{\tau\wedge\sigma_1} e^{-\lambda s} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s\big)ds\right] + \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[1_{\{\tau\geq\sigma_1\}}\int_{\sigma_1}^\tau e^{-\lambda s} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s\big)ds\right] \\
&\geq \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^t 1_{\{s\leq\sigma_1\}} e^{-\lambda s} g\big(x(s,\phi_0), y(s,\phi_1)\big)ds\right] - \frac{\sqrt{2}}{c}\cdot\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[1_{\{t\geq\sigma_1\}} e^{-\lambda\sigma_1}\right] \\
&= \int_0^t e^{-(\lambda+\mu)s}\left[g\big(x(s,\phi_0), y(s,\phi_1)\big) - \frac{\mu}{c}\sqrt{2}\right] ds.
\end{aligned} \tag{6.3}$$

The inequality follows from $g(\phi_0, \phi_1) \geq g(0,0) = -(\lambda/c)\sqrt{2}$, see (4.12). The functions $x(\cdot, \phi_0)$ and $y(\cdot, \phi_1)$ are the solutions of (4.7) (see Remark 4.1), and σ_1 has exponential



(a) $\lambda \geq 1$ $(\phi_d \leq 0)$ (b) $\frac{\lambda}{1-\lambda} \geq \frac{\lambda+\mu}{c}$ $(\lambda < 1)$ (c) $0 < \frac{\lambda}{1-\lambda} < \frac{\lambda+\mu}{c}$ $(\lambda < 1)$

FIGURE 3. Region D

distribution with rate μ under $\mathbb{P}_0$. Clearly, if

$$(6.4) \qquad 0 < g\big(x(s,\phi_0), y(s,\phi_1)\big) - \frac{\mu}{c}\sqrt{2} = x(s,\phi_0) + y(s,\phi_1) - \frac{\lambda+\mu}{c}\sqrt{2}, \quad 0 < s < \infty,$$

then (6.3) implies that $\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^\tau e^{-\lambda s} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s\big)ds\right] > 0$ for every $\mathbb{F}$-stopping time $\tau \neq 0$ almost surely (since the filtration $\mathbb{F}$ is right-continuous, the probability of $\{\tau \geq 0\} \in \mathcal{F}_0$ equals zero or one). Thus, "stopping immediately" is optimal at every (ϕ_0,ϕ_1) where (6.4) holds.

If $\lambda \geq 1$, then $s \mapsto x(s,\phi_0)$ and $s \mapsto y(s,\phi_1)$ are increasing for every $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+$, see (4.7) and Figure 3(a). Therefore, $x(s,\phi_0)+y(s,\phi_1) > x(0,\phi_0)+y(0,\phi_1) = \phi_0+\phi_1$ for every $0 < s < \infty$. Hence, (6.4) holds, and therefore it is optimal to stop immediately outside the region

$$(6.5) \qquad D_1 \triangleq \left\{(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ : \phi_0+\phi_1 < \frac{\lambda+\mu}{c}\sqrt{2}\right\} \qquad \text{if} \quad \lambda \geq 1.$$

Suppose now that $0 < \lambda < 1$; equivalently, ϕ_d of (4.14) is positive. Then $s \mapsto x(s,\phi_0)$ is increasing for every $\phi_0 \in \mathbb{R}_+$. For $\phi_1 = \phi_d$, the derivative $dy(s,\phi_d)/ds$ in (4.7) vanishes for every $0 < s < \infty$. The mapping $s \mapsto y(s,\phi_1)$ is increasing if $\phi_1 \in [0,\phi_d)$, decreasing if $\phi_1 \in (\phi_d,\infty)$, and $\phi(s,\phi_d) = \phi_d$ for every $0 \leq s < \infty$; see (4.7) and Figures 3(b,c). The derivative

$$(6.6) \qquad \frac{d}{dt}\big[x(t,\phi_0)+y(t,\phi_1)\big] = (\lambda+1)x(t,\phi_0) + (\lambda-1)y(t,\phi_1) + \lambda\sqrt{2}$$

of the righthand side of (6.4) (see also (4.7)) vanishes if the curve $s \mapsto (x(s,\phi_0), y(s,\phi_1))$ meets at $s = t$ the line

$$\ell: \quad (\lambda+1)x + (\lambda-1)y + \lambda\sqrt{2} = 0, \quad \text{or} \quad y = \frac{1+\lambda}{1-\lambda}\,x + \frac{\lambda}{1-\lambda}\sqrt{2}. \tag{6.7}$$

Since $m \in (-1,1)$, the "mean-level" ϕ_d in (4.14) and the y-intercept of the line ℓ in (6.7) are related as in

$$\phi_d = \frac{\lambda}{1-\lambda} \cdot \frac{1+m}{\sqrt{2}} < \frac{\lambda}{1-\lambda}\sqrt{2}.$$

Because ℓ is increasing, this relationship implies that the line ℓ in contained in $\mathbb{R}_+ \times (\phi_d, \infty)$ (see Figures 3(b,c)). However, every curve $t \mapsto (x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1))$ starting at some (ϕ_0,ϕ_1) in $\mathbb{R}_+ \times (\phi_d,\infty)$ is "decreasing", and the derivative in (6.6) is increasing. Therefore, any curve $t \mapsto (x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1))$, $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2$ may meet ℓ at most once, and

$$\left\{\begin{array}{l}\text{if } t \mapsto (x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1)) \text{ meets the line } \ell \text{ at } t_\ell = t_\ell(\phi_0,\phi_1), \text{ then } t \mapsto x(t,\phi_0) + \\ y(t,\phi_1) \text{ is decreasing (resp., increasing) on } [0,t_\ell] \text{ (resp., on } [t_\ell,\infty)). \text{ Otherwise,} \\ t \mapsto x(t,\phi_0) + y(t,\phi_1) \text{ is increasing on } [0,\infty).\end{array}\right\}. \tag{6.8}$$

• Consider now the first of two possible cases: the line ℓ does not meet D_1 of (6.5); i.e., $\lambda/(1-\lambda) \geq (\lambda+\mu)/c$, as in Figure 3(b). Then $\phi_0 + \phi_1 \geq (\lambda+\mu)\sqrt{2}/c$ for every $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \ell$. Therefore, (6.8) implies that (6.4) holds, i.e., it is optimal to stop immediately, outside

$$D_1 = \left\{(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : \phi_0 + \phi_1 < \frac{\lambda+\mu}{c}\sqrt{2}\right\} \quad \text{if} \quad \frac{\lambda}{1-\lambda} \geq \frac{\lambda+\mu}{c}. \tag{6.9}$$

• In the second case, the line ℓ of (6.7) meets the region D_1, i.e., $0 < \lambda/(1-\lambda) < (\lambda+\mu)/c$, see Figure 3(c). Let us denote by (ϕ_0^*, ϕ_1^*) the point at the intersection of the line ℓ and the boundary $x + y - (\lambda+\mu)\sqrt{2}/c = 0$ of the region D_1. By running the time "backwards", we can find ξ^* (and t^*) such that

$$(0,\xi^*) = \big(x(-t^*,\phi_0^*), y(-t^*,\phi_1^*)\big). \tag{6.10}$$

Indeed, using (4.8), we can obtain first $t^* \geq 0$ by solving $0 = x(-t^*,\phi_0^*)$, and then $\xi^* \triangleq y(-t^*,\phi_1^*)$. By the semi-group property (4.9), we have

$$x(t^*,0) = x\big(t^*, x(-t^*,\phi_0^*)\big) = x(t^* + (-t^*), \phi_0^*) = x(0,\phi_0^*) = \phi_0^*,$$
$$y(t^*,\xi^*) = y\big(t^*, y(-t^*,\phi_1^*)\big) = y(t^* + (-t^*), \phi_1^*) = y(0,\phi_1^*) = \phi_1^*.$$

Hence, the curve $t \mapsto \big(x(t,0), y(t,\xi^*)\big)$, $t \geq 0$ meets ℓ at (ϕ_0^*, ϕ_1^*), and t_ℓ in (6.8) equals t^*, see Figure 3(c). Therefore, (6.8) implies that

$$x(t,0) + y(t,\xi^*) \geq x(t^*,0) + y(t^*,\xi^*) = \phi_0^* + \phi_1^* = \frac{\lambda+\mu}{c}\sqrt{2}, \quad 0 \leq t < \infty.$$

In particular, $\xi^* = 0 + \xi^* = x(0,0) + y(0,\xi^*) \geq (\lambda+\mu)\sqrt{2}/c$. We are now ready to show that it is optimal to stop immediately outside the region

$$D_2 \triangleq \big\{(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : \phi_0 + \phi_1 < \xi^*\big\} \quad \text{if} \quad 0 < \frac{\lambda}{1-\lambda} < \frac{\lambda+\mu}{c}, \tag{6.11}$$

where ξ^* is as in (6.10). The curve $t \mapsto \big(x(t,0), y(t,\xi^*)\big)$ divides $\mathbb{R}_+^2$ into two connected components each containing the region D_1 of (6.5) and

$$M \triangleq \big(\mathbb{R}_+^2 \backslash D_2\big) \cap \Big\{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : (\lambda+1)x + (\lambda-1)y + \lambda\sqrt{2} < 0\Big\},$$

respectively (see (6.7)). Every curve $t \mapsto \big(x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1)\big)$, $t \geq 0$ starting at (ϕ_0,ϕ_1) in M will stay in the same component as M. Therefore, the curve intersects the line ℓ away from D_1, and (6.8) implies that (6.4) is satisfied for every $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in M$.

For $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in (\mathbb{R}_+^2 \backslash D_2) \cap \big\{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : (\lambda+1)x + (\lambda-1)y + \lambda\sqrt{2} \geq 0\big\}$, the curve $t \mapsto \big(x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1)\big)$, $t \geq 0$ does not meet ℓ; therefore, $t \mapsto x(t,\phi_0) + y(t,\phi_1)$ increases by (6.8) and

$$x(t,\phi_0) + y(t,\phi_1) > x(0,\phi_0) + y(0,\phi_1) = \phi_0 + \phi_1 \geq \xi^* \geq \frac{\lambda+\mu}{c}\sqrt{2}, \qquad 0 < s < \infty.$$

Thus, the sufficient condition (6.4) for the optimality of immediate stopping holds for every $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 \backslash D_2$.

6.1. **Lemma.** *Let τ_D be the exit time of the process $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}$ from the region D in (6.1). Then $\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}[\tau_D]$ is finite for every $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2$.*

Proof. Let $f(\phi_0,\phi_1) \triangleq \phi_0 + \phi_1$, $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2$. Using the explicit form of the infinitesimal generator $\widetilde{\mathcal{A}}$ of the process $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}$ in (7.4), we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} \widetilde{\mathcal{A}}f(\phi_0,\phi_1) &= (\lambda+1)\phi_0 + \frac{\lambda(1-m)}{\sqrt{2}} + (\lambda-1)\phi_1 + \frac{\lambda(1+m)}{\sqrt{2}} \\ &\quad + \mu\left[\left(1-\frac{1}{\mu}\right)\phi_0 + \left(1+\frac{1}{\mu}\right)\phi_1 - (\phi_0+\phi_1)\right] = \lambda(\phi_0+\phi_1+\sqrt{2}) \geq \lambda\sqrt{2} \end{aligned} \tag{6.12}$$

for every $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}_+^2$. Since $f(\cdot,\cdot)$ is bounded on $\overline{D}$ of (6.1) and $\tau_D\wedge t$, $t\ge 0$ is a bounded $\mathbb{F}$-stopping time, (7.3) holds for $\tau=\tau_D\wedge t$. Then we have

$$\xi^*\left(1+\frac{1}{\mu}\right)\ge \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1} f\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_{\tau_D\wedge t}\big) = f(\phi_0,\phi_1)+\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{\tau_D\wedge t}\widetilde{\mathcal{A}}f\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t\big)dt\right]\ge \lambda\sqrt{2}\,\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}[\tau_D\wedge t],\qquad t\ge 0. \tag{6.13}$$

The process $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}$ may leave the region D in (6.1) continuously or by a jump. Since $f(S(\phi_0,\phi_1))=(1+1/\mu)\phi_0+(1-1/\mu)\phi_1\le(1+1/\mu)(\phi_0+\phi_1)=(1+1/\mu)f(\phi_0,\phi_1)\le(1+1/\mu)\xi^*$ for every $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in D$, and this upper bound is larger than ξ^*, the first inequality in (6.13) follows. The second inequality is due to (6.12). Finally, the monotone convergence theorem and (6.13) imply that $\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}[\tau_D]$ is finite. □

7. Appendix: proofs of selected results in Part 1

The $\mathbb{P}_0$-infinitesimal generator $\widetilde{\mathcal{A}}$ of the process $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}$ in (4.5). Let us denote by $\widetilde{\mathcal{A}}$ the infinitesimal generator under $\mathbb{P}_0$ of the process $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}=\begin{bmatrix}\widetilde{\Phi}^{(0)} & \widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)}\end{bmatrix}^{\mathrm{T}}$ in (4.5). For every function $f\in\mathbf{C}^{1,1}(\mathbb{R}_+\times\mathbb{R}_+)$, we have

$$f(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t)=f(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_0)+\sum_{0<s\le t}\Big[f(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s)-f(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_{s-})\Big] + \int_0^t\left\{D_{\phi_0}f(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s)\left[(\lambda+1)\widetilde{\Phi}_s^{(0)}+\frac{\lambda(1-m)}{\sqrt{2}}\right]+D_{\phi_1}f(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s)\left[(\lambda-1)\widetilde{\Phi}_s^{(1)}+\frac{\lambda(1+m)}{\sqrt{2}}\right]\right\}ds \tag{7.1}$$

and

$$\sum_{0<s\le t}\big[f(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s)-f(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_{s-})\big]=\int_0^t\left[f\left(\left(1-\frac{1}{\mu}\right)\cdot\widetilde{\Phi}_{s-}^{(0)},\left(1+\frac{1}{\mu}\right)\cdot\widetilde{\Phi}_{s-}^{(1)}\right)-f\left(\widetilde{\Phi}_{s-}^{(0)},\widetilde{\Phi}_{s-}^{(1)}\right)\right]dN_s.$$

Note that $\{N_t-\mu t;\ t\ge 0\}$ is a $(\mathbb{P}_0,\mathbb{F})$-martingale. Then for every $\mathbb{F}$-stopping time τ such that

$$\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left|f\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_\tau\big)\right|<\infty\quad\text{and}$$
$$\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^\tau\left|f\left(\left(1-\frac{1}{\mu}\right)\cdot\widetilde{\Phi}_{s-}^{(0)},\left(1+\frac{1}{\mu}\right)\cdot\widetilde{\Phi}_{s-}^{(1)}\right)-f\left(\widetilde{\Phi}_{s-}^{(0)},\widetilde{\Phi}_{s-}^{(1)}\right)\right|ds\right]<\infty, \tag{7.2}$$

we have

$$\mathbb{E}_0 f(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_\tau)=f(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_0)+\mathbb{E}_0\int_0^\tau\widetilde{\mathcal{A}}f(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s)ds,\qquad t\ge 0, \tag{7.3}$$

and

$$\widetilde{\mathcal{A}}f(\phi_0,\phi_1) = D_{\phi_0}f(\phi_0,\phi_1)\left[(\lambda+1)\phi_0 + \frac{\lambda(1-m)}{\sqrt{2}}\right] + D_{\phi_1}f(\phi_0,\phi_1)\left[(\lambda-1)\phi_1 + \frac{\lambda(1+m)}{\sqrt{2}}\right]$$
$$+\mu\left[f\left(\left(1-\frac{1}{\mu}\right)\phi_0, \left(1+\frac{1}{\mu}\right)\phi_1\right) - f(\phi_0,\phi_1)\right], \quad (\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}_+\times\mathbb{R}_+. \tag{7.4}$$

Proof of Lemma 5.3. Let $w : \mathbb{R}_+^2 \mapsto \mathbb{R}$ be a bounded Borel function. Since $g(\cdot,\cdot) \geq g(0,0) = -\lambda\sqrt{2}/c$ in (4.12) is bounded from below, the function $J_0 w$ is well-defined. By (5.7),

$$Jw(t,\phi_0,\phi_1) \geq -\left(\frac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2}+\mu||w||\right)\int_0^\infty e^{-(\lambda+\mu)u}du = -\left(\frac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2}+\mu||w||\right)\frac{1}{\lambda+\mu}$$

for every $t\in[0,\infty]$. Since we also have $J_0w(\phi_0,\phi_1)\leq Jw(0,\phi_0,\phi_1)=0$, we obtain (5.9).

Suppose now that w is also concave. For every $u\in\mathbb{R}$, the functions $\phi_0\mapsto x(u,\phi_0)$ and $\phi_1\mapsto y(u,\phi_1)$ in (4.8) are linear. The mappings $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\mapsto S(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ in (5.8) and $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\mapsto g(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ in (4.12) are also linear. Therefore, the integrand in (5.7), namely

$$(\phi_0,\phi_1)\mapsto e^{-(\lambda+\mu)u}\big(g+\mu\cdot w\circ S\big)\big(x(u,\phi_0),y(u,\phi_1)\big) \quad \text{is concave for every } u\in[0,\infty).$$

Thus, the mappings $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\mapsto Jw(t,(\phi_0,\phi_1))$, $t\in[0,\infty]$ in (5.7) are concave. Then $J_0w(\phi_0,\phi_1) = \inf_{t\in[0,\infty]} Jw(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)$ is a lower envelope of concave mappings, and therefore, is a concave function of $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}_+^2$. Finally, it is clear from (5.7) that $w_1\leq w_2$ implies that $J_0w_1\leq J_0w_2$. ☐

Proof of Corollary 5.4. The function $v_0\equiv 0$ has all of the properties. The proof of the lemma now follows from an induction and the properties of concave functions. ☐

For the proof of Proposition 5.5, we shall need the following result on the characterization of $\mathbb{F}$-stopping times, see Brémaud (1981, Theorem T33, p. 308), Davis (1993, Lemma A2.3, p. 261).

7.1. **Lemma.** *For every $\mathbb{F}$-stopping time τ and every $n\in\mathbb{N}_0$, there is an $\mathcal{F}_{\sigma_n}$-measurable random variable $R_n:\Omega\mapsto[0,\infty]$ such that $\tau\wedge\sigma_{n+1}=(\sigma_n+R_n)\wedge\sigma_{n+1}$ holds $\mathbb{P}_0$-a.s. on $\{\tau\geq\sigma_n\}$.*

Proof of Proposition 5.5. First, we shall establish the inequality

$$\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\int_0^{\tau\wedge\sigma_n} e^{-\lambda t}g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t\big)dt \geq v_n(\phi_0,\phi_1), \qquad \tau\in\mathcal{S},\ (\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}_+^2 \tag{7.5}$$

for every $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$, by proving inductively on $k = 1, \ldots, n+1$ that

$$\begin{aligned}(7.6)\quad & \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1} \int_0^{\tau\wedge\sigma_n} e^{-\lambda t} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t\big)dt \\ & \geq \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{\tau\wedge\sigma_{n-k+1}} e^{-\lambda t} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t\big)dt + 1_{\{\tau\geq\sigma_{n-k+1}\}} e^{-\lambda\sigma_{n-k+1}} v_{k-1}\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_{\sigma_{n-k+1}}\big)\right] =: RHS_{k-1}.\end{aligned}$$

Observe that (7.5) follows from (7.6) when we set $k = n+1$.

If $k = 1$, then the inequality (7.6) is satisfied as an equality since $v_0 \equiv 0$. Suppose that (7.6) holds for some $1 \leq k < n+1$. We shall prove that it must also hold when k is replaced with $k+1$. Let us denote the righthand side of (7.6) by RHS_{k-1}, and rewrite it as

$$\begin{aligned}(7.7)\quad & RHS_{k-1} = RHS_{k-1}^{(1)} + RHS_{k-1}^{(2)} \triangleq \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{\tau\wedge\sigma_{n-k}} e^{-\lambda t} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t\big)dt\right] \\ & + \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[1_{\{\tau\geq\sigma_{n-k}\}}\left(\int_{\sigma_{n-k}}^{\tau\wedge\sigma_{n-k+1}} e^{-\lambda t} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t\big)dt + 1_{\{\tau\geq\sigma_{n-k+1}\}} e^{-\lambda\sigma_{n-k+1}} v_{k-1}\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_{\sigma_{n-k+1}}\big)\right)\right]\end{aligned}$$

where we used $\int_0^{\tau\wedge\sigma_{n-k+1}} = \int_0^{\tau\wedge\sigma_{n-k}} + \int_{\tau\wedge\sigma_{n-k}}^{\tau\wedge\sigma_{n-k+1}} = \int_0^{\tau\wedge\sigma_{n-k}} + 1_{\{\tau\geq\sigma_{n-k}\}} \int_{\tau\wedge\sigma_{n-k}}^{\tau\wedge\sigma_{n-k+1}}$, as well as $1_{\{\tau\geq\sigma_{n-k}\}} 1_{\{\tau\geq\sigma_{n-k+1}\}} = 1_{\{\tau\geq\sigma_{n-k+1}\}}$. By Lemma 7.1, there is an $\mathcal{F}_{\sigma_{n-k}}$-measurable random variable R_{n-k} such that

$$\tau \wedge \sigma_{n-k+1} = (\sigma_{n-k} + R_{n-k}) \wedge \sigma_{n-k+1} \quad \text{holds } \mathbb{P}_0\text{-almost surely on } \{\tau \geq \sigma_{n-k}\}.$$

Therefore, the second expectation, denoted by $RSH_{k-1}^{(2)}$, in (7.7) becomes

$$\begin{aligned}& \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left\{1_{\{\tau\geq\sigma_{n-k}\}}\left[\int_{\sigma_{n-k}}^{(\sigma_{n-k}+R_{n-k})\wedge\sigma_{n-k+1}} e^{-\lambda t} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t\big)dt + 1_{\{\sigma_{n-k}+R_{n-k}\geq\sigma_{n-k+1}\}}\cdot\right.\right. \\ & \qquad\left.\left. e^{-\lambda\sigma_{n-k+1}} v_{k-1}\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_{\sigma_{n-k+1}}\big)\right]\right\} = \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left\{1_{\{\tau\geq\sigma_{n-k}\}} e^{-\lambda\sigma_{n-k}} f_{n-k}(R_{n-k}, \widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_{\sigma_{n-k}})\right\}\end{aligned}$$

by the strong Markov property of N, where

$$\begin{aligned}f_{k-1}(r,\phi_0,\phi_1) &\triangleq \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{r\wedge\sigma_1} e^{-\lambda t} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t\big)dt + 1_{\{r\geq\sigma_1\}} e^{-\lambda\sigma_1} v_{k-1}\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_{\sigma_1}\big)\right] \\ &= J v_{k-1}(r,(\phi_0,\phi_1)) \geq J_0 v_{k-1}(\phi_0,\phi_1) = v_k(\phi_0,\phi_1).\end{aligned}$$

The (in)equalities follow from (5.3), (5.4) and (5.6), respectively. Thus

$$RHS_{k-1}^{(2)} \geq \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[1_{\{\tau\geq\sigma_{n-k}\}} e^{-\lambda\sigma_{n-k}} v_k\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_{\sigma_{n-k}}\big)\right].$$

From (7.6) and (7.7), we finally obtain

$$\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\int_0^{\tau\wedge\sigma_n} e^{-\lambda t} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t\big)dt \geq RHS_{k-1} = \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{\tau\wedge\sigma_{n-k}} e^{-\lambda t} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t\big)dt\right] + RHS_{k-1}^{(2)}$$
$$\geq \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{\tau\wedge\sigma_{n-k}} e^{-\lambda t} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t\big)dt + 1_{\{\tau\geq\sigma_{n-k}\}} e^{-\lambda\sigma_{n-k}} v_k\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_{\sigma_{n-k}}\big)\right] = RHS_k.$$

This completes the proof of (7.6) by induction on k, and (7.5) follows by setting $k = n+1$ in (7.6). When we take the infimum of both sides in (7.5), we obtain $V_n \geq v_n$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$.

The reverse inequality $V_n \leq v_n$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ follows immediately from (5.11) since every $\mathbb{F}$-stopping time S_n^ε is less than or equal to σ_n, $\mathbb{P}_0$-a.s. by construction. Therefore, we only need to establish (5.11). We will prove it by induction on $n \in \mathbb{N}$. For $n = 1$, the lefthand side of (5.11) becomes

$$\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\int_0^{S_1^\varepsilon} e^{-\lambda t} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t\big)dt = \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\int_0^{r_0^\varepsilon(\phi_0,\phi_1)\wedge\sigma_1} e^{-\lambda t} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t\big)dt = Jv_0(r_0^\varepsilon(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_0,\phi_1).$$

Since $Jv_0(r_0^\varepsilon(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_0,\phi_1) \leq J_0v_0(\phi_0,\phi_1) + \varepsilon$ by Remark 5.2, (5.11) holds for $n = 1$.

Suppose that (5.11) holds for every $\varepsilon > 0$ for some $n \in \mathbb{N}$. We will prove that it also holds when n is replaced with $n+1$. Since $S_{n+1}^\varepsilon \wedge \sigma_1 = r_n^{\varepsilon/2}\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_0\big) \wedge \sigma_1$, $\mathbb{P}_0$-a.s., we have

$$\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{S_{n+1}^\varepsilon} e^{-\lambda t} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t\big)dt\right] = \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{S_{n+1}^\varepsilon\wedge\sigma_1} e^{-\lambda t} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t\big)dt + 1_{\{S_{n+1}^\varepsilon\geq\sigma_1\}}\int_{\sigma_1}^{S_{n+1}^\varepsilon} e^{-\lambda t} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t\big)dt\right]$$
$$= \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{r_n^{\varepsilon/2}(\phi_0,\phi_1)\wedge\sigma_1} e^{-\lambda t} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t\big)dt\right] + \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[1_{\{r_n^{\varepsilon/2}(\phi_0,\phi_1)\geq\sigma_1\}} e^{-\lambda\sigma_1} f_n\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_{\sigma_1}\big)\right]$$

by the strong Markov property of N, where

$$f_n(\phi_0,\phi_1) \triangleq \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{S_n^{\varepsilon/2}} e^{-\lambda t} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t\big)dt\right] \leq v_n(\phi_0,\phi_1) + \varepsilon/2$$

by the induction hypothesis. Therefore,

$$\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{S_{n+1}^\varepsilon} e^{-\lambda t} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t\big)dt\right] \leq \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{r_n^{\varepsilon/2}(\phi_0,\phi_1)\wedge\sigma_1} e^{-\lambda t} g\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t\big)dt + 1_{\{r_n^{\varepsilon/2}(\phi_0,\phi_1)\geq\sigma_1\}} e^{-\lambda\sigma_1} v_n\big(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_{\sigma_1}\big)\right] + \varepsilon/2 = Jv_n(r_n^{\varepsilon/2}(\phi_0,\phi_1),(\phi_0,\phi_1)) + \varepsilon/2. \tag{7.8}$$

Since $Jv_n(r_n^{\varepsilon/2}(\phi_0,\phi_1),(\phi_0,\phi_1)) \leq v_{n+1}(\phi_0,\phi_1) + \varepsilon/2$ by Remark 5.2, this inequality and (7.8) prove (5.11) when n is replaced with $n+1$. □

Proof of Proposition 5.6. Corollary 5.4 and Propositions 5.5 and 5.1 imply that $v(\phi_0, \phi_1) = \lim_{n\to\infty} v_n(\phi_0, \phi_1) = \lim_{n\to\infty} V_n(\phi_0, \phi_1) = V(\phi_0, \phi_1)$ for every $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2$. Next, let us show that $V = J_0 V$. Since $(v_n)_{n\geq 1}$ is a decreasing sequence, for every $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2$

$$V(\phi_0, \phi_1) = \lim_{n\to\infty} v_n(\phi_0, \phi_1) = \inf_{n\geq 1} v_n(\phi_0, \phi_1) = \inf_{n\geq 1} J_0 v_{n-1}(\phi_0, \phi_1). \tag{7.9}$$

Since $(Jv_n)_{n\geq 1}$ is a decreasing sequence, and $\{v_n\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ are uniformly bounded, the dominated convergence theorem and (7.9) imply that $V(\phi_0, \phi_1) = \inf_{n\geq 1} J_0 v_{n-1}(\phi_0, \phi_1) = J_0 v(\phi_0, \phi_1) = J_0 V(\phi_0, \phi_1)$. Finally, since $U \leq 0$, we have $U \leq v_n$ for every n by induction, and $U \leq \lim_{n\to\infty} v_n = V$. $\square$

Proof of Lemma 5.7. Let us fix a constant $u \geq t$ and $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2$. Then

$$\begin{aligned} Jw(u, \phi_0, \phi_1) &= \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{u\wedge\sigma_1} e^{-\lambda s} g(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s)ds + 1_{\{u\geq\sigma_1\}} e^{-\lambda\sigma_1} w(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_{\sigma_1})\right] \\ &= \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{t\wedge\sigma_1} e^{-\lambda s} g(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s)ds + 1_{\{u\geq\sigma_1\}} e^{-\lambda\sigma_1} w(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_{\sigma_1})\right] + \mathbb{E}^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[1_{\{\sigma_1>t\}}\int_t^{u\wedge\sigma_1} e^{-\lambda s} g(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s)ds\right]. \end{aligned} \tag{7.10}$$

On the event $\{\sigma_1 > t\}$, we have $u\wedge\sigma_1 = [t+(u-t)]\wedge[t+(\sigma_1\circ\theta_t)] = t+[(u-t)\wedge(\sigma_1\circ\theta_t)]$. Therefore, the strong Markov property of N applied to the last integral above, gives

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[1_{\{\sigma_1>t\}}\int_t^{u\wedge\sigma_1} e^{-\lambda s} g(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s)ds\right] &= \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[1_{\{\sigma_1>t\}}\int_0^{u\wedge\sigma_1-t} e^{-\lambda(s+t)} g(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_{s+t})ds\right] \\ &= \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[1_{\{\sigma_1>t\}} e^{-\lambda t}\mathbb{E}_0^{\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t}\left[\int_0^{(u-t)\wedge\sigma_1} e^{-\lambda s} g(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s)ds\right]\right] \\ &= \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[1_{\{\sigma_1>t\}} e^{-\lambda t}\Big(Jw(u-t, \widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t) - \mathbb{E}_0^{\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t}\left[1_{\{u-t\geq\sigma_1\}} e^{-\lambda\sigma_1} w(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_{\sigma_1})\right]\Big)\right] \\ &= e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t}\, Jw\big(u-t, (x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_0))\big) - \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[1_{\{\sigma_1>t\}} 1_{\{u\geq\sigma_1\}} e^{-\lambda\sigma_1} w(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_{\sigma_1})\right]. \end{aligned} \tag{7.11}$$

The third equality follows from the definition of Jw in (5.3) and the last from (4.10) and the strong Markov property. Substituting (7.11) into (7.10) and simplifying the rest give

$$Jw(u, \phi_0, \phi_1) = Jw(t, (\phi_0, \phi_1)) + e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t}\, Jw\big(u-t, (x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_0))\big).$$

Finally, taking the infimum of both sides over $u \in [t, +\infty]$ gives (5.12). $\square$

Proof of Proposition 5.11. First, let us show (5.22) for $n=1$. Fix $\varepsilon \ge 0$ and $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2$. By Lemma 7.1, there exists a constant $u \in [0,\infty]$ such that $U_\varepsilon \wedge \sigma_1 = u \wedge \sigma_1$. Then

$$\begin{aligned}
(7.12)\quad \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1} M_{U_\varepsilon\wedge\sigma_1} &= \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[e^{-\lambda(u\wedge\sigma_1)}V(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_{u\wedge\sigma_1}) + \int_0^{u\wedge\sigma_1} e^{-\lambda s} g(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s)ds\right]\\
&= \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{u\wedge\sigma_1} e^{-\lambda s} g(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s)ds + 1_{\{u\ge\sigma_1\}}e^{-\lambda\sigma_1}V(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_{\sigma_1})\right] + \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[1_{\{u<\sigma_1\}}e^{-\lambda u}V(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_u)\right]\\
&= JV(u,(\phi_0,\phi_1)) + e^{-(\lambda+\mu)u}V\big(x(u,\phi_0),y(u,\phi_1)\big) = J_uV(\phi_0,\phi_1),
\end{aligned}$$

where the third equality follows from (5.3) and (4.10), and the fourth from (5.16).

Fix any $t\in[0,u)$. By (5.16) and (4.10) once again, we have

$$\begin{aligned}
&JV(t,\phi_0,\phi_1) = J_tV(\phi_0,\phi_1) - e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t}V\left(x(t,\phi_0),y(t,\phi_1)\right)\\
&\ge J_0V(\phi_0,\phi_1) - e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t}V\left(x(t,\phi_0),y(t,\phi_1)\right) = J_0V(\phi_0,\phi_1) - \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[1_{\{\sigma_1>t\}}e^{-\lambda t}V(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t)\right].
\end{aligned}$$

On the event $\{\sigma_1 > t\}$, we have $U_\varepsilon > t$ (otherwise, $U_\varepsilon \le t < \sigma_1$ would imply $U_\varepsilon = u \le t$, which contradicts with our initial choice of $t<u$). Thus, $V(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t) < -\varepsilon$ on $\{\sigma_1>t\}$. Hence,

$$JV(t,\phi_0,\phi_1) > J_0V(\phi_0,\phi_1) + \varepsilon\,\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[1_{\{\sigma_1>t\}}e^{-\lambda t}\right] = J_0V(\phi_0,\phi_1) + \varepsilon\, e^{-(\lambda+\mu)u} \ge J_0V(\phi_0,\phi_1)$$

for every $t\in[0,u)$. Therefore, $J_0V(\phi_0,\phi_1) = J_uV(\phi_0,\phi_1)$, and (7.12) implies

$$\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}[M_{U_\varepsilon\wedge\sigma_1}] = J_uV(\phi_0,\phi_1) = J_0V(\phi_0,\phi_1) = V(\phi_0,\phi_1) = \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}[M_0].$$

This completes the proof of (5.22) for $n=1$.

Now suppose that (5.22) holds for some $n\in\mathbb{N}$, and let us show the same equality for $n+1$. Note that

$$\begin{aligned}
\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}[M_{U_\varepsilon\wedge\sigma_{n+1}}] &= \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}[1_{\{U_\varepsilon<\sigma_1\}}M_{U_\varepsilon}] + \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[1_{\{U_\varepsilon\ge\sigma_1\}}\int_0^{\sigma_1} e^{-\lambda s}g(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s)ds\right]\\
&\quad + \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[1_{\{U_\varepsilon\ge\sigma_1\}}\left\{\int_{\sigma_1}^{U_\varepsilon\wedge\sigma_{n+1}} e^{-\lambda s}g(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s)ds + e^{-\lambda(U_\varepsilon\wedge\sigma_{n+1})}V(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_{U_\varepsilon\wedge\sigma_{n+1}})\right\}\right].
\end{aligned}$$

Since $U_\varepsilon\wedge\sigma_{n+1} = \sigma_1 + [(U_\varepsilon\wedge\sigma_n)\circ\theta_{\sigma_1}]$ on the event $\{U_\varepsilon\ge\sigma_1\}$, the strong Markov property of $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}$ at the stopping time σ_1 will complete the proof. □

Proof of Proposition 5.12. Note that the sequence of random variables

$$\int_0^{U_\varepsilon\wedge\sigma_n} e^{-\lambda s}g(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s)ds + e^{-\lambda(U_\varepsilon\wedge\sigma_n)}V(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_{U_\varepsilon\wedge\sigma_n}) \ge -2\int_0^\infty e^{-\lambda s}\frac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2}\,ds = -\frac{2\sqrt{2}}{c}$$

is bounded from below, see (4.12). By (5.22) and Fatou's Lemma, we have

$$V(\phi_0,\phi_1) \geq \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\varliminf_{n\to\infty}\left(\int_0^{U_\varepsilon\wedge\sigma_n} e^{-\lambda s} g(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s)ds + e^{-\lambda(U_\varepsilon\wedge\sigma_n)}V(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_{U_\varepsilon\wedge\sigma_n})\right)\right]$$

$$\geq \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{U_\varepsilon} e^{-\lambda s} g(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s)ds\right] - \varepsilon\, \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[1_{\{U_\varepsilon<\infty\}}e^{-\lambda U_\varepsilon}\right] \geq \mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^{U_\varepsilon} e^{-\lambda s} g(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_s)ds\right] - \varepsilon$$

for every $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}_+^2$. The second inequality follows from (5.21). □

Part 2. SYNTHESIS: SOLUTION AND NUMERICAL METHODS

8. The solution

In Proposition 5.1, we showed that the value function $V(\phi_0, \phi_1)$ of our original optimal stopping problem in (4.12) is approximated *uniformly* in $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2$ by the decreasing sequence $\{V_n(\phi_0, \phi_1)\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ of the value functions of the optimal stopping problems in (5.1). The value functions $V_n(\cdot,\cdot) = v_n(\cdot,\cdot)$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ can be calculated sequentially by setting $v_0 \equiv 0$, and

$$v_{n+1}(\phi_0, \phi_1) = J_0 v_n(\phi_0, \phi_1) = \inf_{t\in[0,\infty]} Jv_n(t, \phi_0, \phi_1), \qquad (\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2, \tag{8.1}$$

where the operator J is defined in (5.3); see Proposition 5.5.

Finding the infimum in (8.1) is not as formidable as it may look. By Proposition 5.5, the infimum in (8.1) is always attained (i.e., the case $\varepsilon = 0$ in (5.11)). By Corollary 5.8, it is attained at the exit time $r_n(\phi_0, \phi_1)$ of the deterministic and continuous curve $t \mapsto (x(t, \phi_0), y(t, \phi_1))$ in (4.7) from the set

$$\left\{(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : v_{n+1}(\phi_0, \phi_1) < 0\right\} \subseteq \left\{(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : v(\phi_0, \phi_1) < 0\right\} \subseteq D,$$

where D is the triangular region in (6.1), and the last inclusion is proven in Section 6. Therefore, the search for the infimum in (8.1) can be confined for every $n \in \mathbb{N}$ to

$$Jv_n(t, \phi_0, \phi_1) = \int_0^t e^{-(\lambda+\mu)u}[g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x(u, \phi_0), y(u, \phi_1))du, \quad t \in [0, \overline{r}(\phi_0, \phi_1)] \tag{8.2}$$

over the interval $t \in [0, \overline{r}(\phi_0, \phi_1)]$, where

$$\overline{r}(\phi_0, \phi_1) \triangleq \inf\{t \geq 0 : x(t, \phi_0) + y(t, \phi_1) \geq \xi^*\}, \quad (\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2$$

is the (bounded) exit time of the curve $t \mapsto (x(t, \phi_0), y(t, \phi_1))$ out of the region D in (6.1).

Finally, the error in approximating $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ of (4.12) by $\{v_n(\cdot,\cdot)\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ in (8.1) can be controlled. For every $\varepsilon > 0$,

$$\frac{\sqrt{2}}{c}\left(\frac{\mu}{\lambda+\mu}\right)^n < \varepsilon \quad \Longrightarrow \quad -\varepsilon \leq V(\phi_0, \phi_1) - v_n(\phi_0, \phi_1) \leq 0, \;\; \forall\, (\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2, \tag{8.3}$$

by Propositions 5.1 and 5.5. The exponential rate of the uniform convergence of $\{v_n(\cdot,\cdot)\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ to $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ on $\mathbb{R}_+^2$ in (8.3) may also reduce the computational burden by allowing relatively small number of iterations in (8.1).

In the remainder, we draw attention to certain special cases where the value function $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ can be calculated *gradually* at each iteration in (8.1); see Proposition 9.3. In the meantime, we will give a precise geometric description of the stopping regions

$$\mathbf{\Gamma}_n \triangleq \{(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ : v_n(\phi_0, \phi_1) = 0\}, \qquad \mathbf{C}_n \triangleq \mathbb{R}^2_+ \backslash \mathbf{\Gamma}_n, \quad n \in \mathbb{N}, \tag{8.4}$$

$$\mathbf{\Gamma} \triangleq \{(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ : v(\phi_0, \phi_1) = 0\}, \qquad \mathbf{C} \triangleq \mathbb{R}^2_+ \backslash \mathbf{\Gamma}, \tag{8.5}$$

and describe the optimal stopping strategies.

9. The structure of the stopping regions

By Proposition 5.12, the set $\mathbf{\Gamma}$ is the *optimal stopping region* for the problem (4.12). Namely, stopping at the first hitting time $U_0 = \inf\{t \in \mathbb{R}_+ : \widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t \in \mathbf{\Gamma}\}$ of the process $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}} = (\widetilde{\Phi}^{(0)}, \widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)})$ to the set $\mathbf{\Gamma}$ is optimal for (4.12).

Similarly, we shall call each set $\mathbf{\Gamma}_n$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ a *stopping region* for the family of optimal stopping problems in (5.1). However, unlike the case above, we need the first n stopping regions, $\mathbf{\Gamma}_1, \ldots, \mathbf{\Gamma}_n$, in order to describe an optimal stopping time for the problem in (5.1). Using Corollary 5.8, the optimal stopping time $S_n \equiv S_n^0$ in Proposition 5.5 for V_n of (5.1) may be described as follows: *Stop if the process $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}$ hits $\mathbf{\Gamma}_n$ before N jumps. If N jumps before $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}$ reaches $\mathbf{\Gamma}_n$, then wait, and stop if $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}$ hits $\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n-1}$ before the next jump of N, and so on. If the rule is not met before $(n-1)$st jump of N, then stop at the earliest of the hitting time of $\mathbf{\Gamma}_1$ and the next jump time of N.* See Figure 4(b) for three realizations of the stopping time S_2.

We shall call each $\mathbf{C}_n \triangleq \mathbb{R}^2_+ \backslash \mathbf{\Gamma}_n$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ a *continuation region* for the family of optimal stopping problems in (5.1), and $\mathbf{C} \triangleq \mathbb{R}^2_+ \backslash \mathbf{\Gamma}$ the *optimal continuation region* for (4.12). The stopping regions are related by

$$\mathbb{R}^2_+ \backslash D \subset \mathbf{\Gamma} \subset \cdots \subset \mathbf{\Gamma}_n \subset \mathbf{\Gamma}_{n-1} \subset \cdots \subset \mathbf{\Gamma}_1 \subset \mathbb{R}^2_+ \backslash \mathbf{C}_0, \quad \text{and} \quad \mathbf{\Gamma} = \bigcap_{n=1}^{\infty} \mathbf{\Gamma}_n, \tag{9.1}$$

since the sequence of nonpositive functions $\{v_n\}_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ is decreasing, and $v = \lim_{n\to\infty} \downarrow v_n$ by Lemma 5.4. The sets D and $\mathbf{C}_0$ are defined in (6.1) and (4.13), respectively. Since v_n, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and v are concave and continuous mappings from $\mathbb{R}^2_+$ into $(-\infty, 0]$ by Lemma 5.4, the stopping regions $\mathbf{\Gamma}_n$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\mathbf{\Gamma}$ are convex and closed. Let us define the functions $\gamma_n : \mathbb{R}_+ \mapsto \mathbb{R}_+$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\gamma : \mathbb{R}_+ \mapsto \mathbb{R}_+$ by (see, also, Figure 4(a))

$$\gamma_n(x) \triangleq \inf\{y \in \mathbb{R}_+ : (x, y) \in \mathbf{\Gamma}_n\}, \qquad x \in \mathbb{R}_+,$$
$$\gamma(x) \triangleq \inf\{y \in \mathbb{R}_+ : (x, y) \in \mathbf{\Gamma}\}, \qquad x \in \mathbb{R}_+,$$

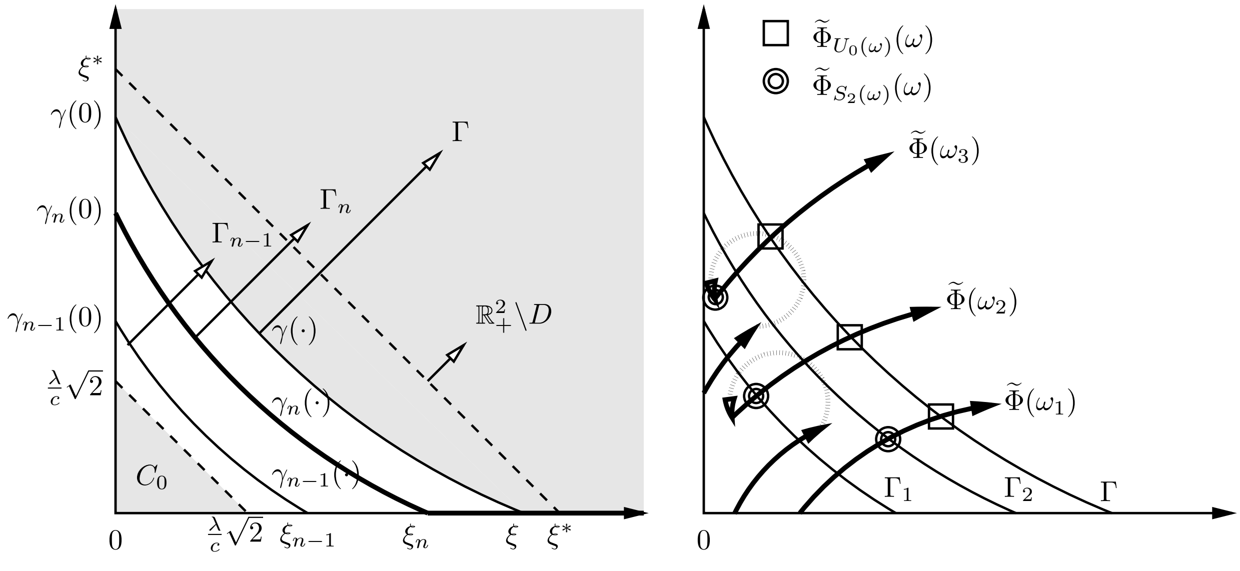


FIGURE 4. (a) The stopping regions (each arrow at the boundary of a region points toward the interior of that region), and (b) three sample paths and the optimal stopping times S_2 and U_0 for the optimal stopping problems V_2 in (5.1) and V in (4.12), respectively.

and the numbers

$$\xi_n \triangleq \inf\{x \in \mathbb{R}_+ : \gamma_n(x) = 0\},\ n \in \mathbb{N} \quad \text{and} \quad \xi \triangleq \inf\{x \in \mathbb{R}_+ : \gamma(x) = 0\}.$$

Then the stopping regions $\mathbf{\Gamma}_n$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\mathbf{\Gamma}$ are the convex and closed epigraphs of the functions $\gamma_n(\cdot)$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\gamma(\cdot)$, respectively. Therefore, $\gamma_n(\cdot)$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\gamma(\cdot)$ are convex and continuous mappings from $\mathbb{R}_+$ into $\mathbb{R}_+$.

By the set-inclusions in (9.1), we have $(\lambda/c)\sqrt{2} \le \xi_{n-1} \le \xi_n \le \xi \le \xi^*$ for the same $\xi^* \in \mathbb{R}_+$ in the description (6.1) of the set D. Since v_n, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and v vanish on $\mathbb{R}_+ \backslash D = \{(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : \phi_0 + \phi_1 \ge \xi^*\}$ by (9.1), the functions $\gamma_n(\cdot)$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\gamma(\cdot)$ vanish on $[\xi^*, \infty)$. However, ξ_n and ξ are the *smallest* zeros of the continuous functions $\gamma_n(\cdot)$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\gamma(\cdot)$, respectively. Since both functions are also nonnegative and convex, the function $\gamma_n(\cdot)$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ (resp. $\gamma(\cdot)$) equals zero on $[\xi_n, \infty)$ (resp. on $[\xi, \infty)$) and is *strictly* decreasing on $[0, \xi_n]$ (resp. on $[0, \xi]$). For future reference, we now summarize our results.

9.1. **Proposition.** *There are decreasing, convex and continuous mappings $\gamma_n : \mathbb{R}_+ \mapsto \mathbb{R}_+$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\gamma : \mathbb{R}_+ \mapsto \mathbb{R}_+$ such that*

$$\mathbf{\Gamma}_n = \{(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : \phi_1 \ge \gamma_n(\phi_0)\},\ n \in \mathbb{N} \quad \textit{and} \quad \mathbf{\Gamma} = \{(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : \phi_1 \ge \gamma(\phi_0)\}.$$

The sequence $\{\gamma_n(\phi_0)\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ *is increasing and* $\gamma(\phi_0) = \lim\uparrow \gamma_n(\phi_0)$ *for every* $\phi_0 \in \mathbb{R}_+$*. There are some numbers*

$$\frac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2} \le \xi_1 \le \cdots \le \xi_{n-1} \le \xi_n \le \cdots \le \xi < \xi^* < \infty \tag{9.2}$$

such that $\gamma_n(\cdot)$*,* $n \in \mathbb{N}$ *(resp.,* $\gamma(\cdot)$*) is strictly decreasing on* $[0, \xi_n]$*,* $n \in \mathbb{N}$ *(resp.,* $[0, \xi]$*), and equals zero on* $[\xi_n, \infty)$*,* $n \in \mathbb{N}$ *(resp.,* $[\xi, \infty)$*). Moreover,*

$$\frac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2} \le \gamma_1(0) \le \cdots \le \gamma_{n-1}(0) \le \gamma_n(0) \le \cdots \le \gamma(0) < \xi^* < \infty. \tag{9.3}$$

The number ξ^* *is the same as in the definition of the set* D *in (6.1).*

9.2. **Notation.** Let $S : \mathbb{R}^2_+ \mapsto \mathbb{R}^2_+$ be the same linear map as in (5.8).

(N1) For any subset $R \subseteq \mathbb{R}^2_+$,

$$S^{-(n+1)}(R) \triangleq S^{-1}(S^{-n}(R)),\ n \in \mathbb{N}, \quad S^{-1}(R) \triangleq \{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ : S(x,y) \in R\},$$
$$S^{n+1}(R) \triangleq S(S^n(R)),\ n \in \mathbb{N}, \qquad S(R) \triangleq \{S(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ : (x,y) \in R\},$$

and $S^0(R) = S(S^{-1}(R)) = S^{-1}(S(R)) = R$.

(N2) For every singleton $\{(x,y)\} \subseteq \mathbb{R}^2_+$, we write

$$S^m(\{x,y\}) = S^m(x,y) = \left(\left(1-\frac{1}{\mu}\right)^m x, \left(1+\frac{1}{\mu}\right)^m y\right), \qquad m \in \mathbb{Z}.$$

(N3) For any function $g : \mathbb{R}_+ \mapsto \mathbb{R}_+$, we define the function $S^n[g] : \mathbb{R}_+ \mapsto \mathbb{R}_+$, $n \in \mathbb{Z}$ by

$$S^n[g](x) \triangleq \inf\{y \in \mathbb{R}_+ : (x,y) \in S^n(\text{epi}(g))\}, \qquad x \in \mathbb{R}_+.$$

That is, $S^n[g]$ is the function whose epigraph is the set $S^n(\text{epi}(g))$. Note that we use $S^n(\cdot)$ and $S^n[\cdot]$ to distinguish the sets and the functions.

(N4) For every subset R of $\mathbb{R}^2_+$, we denote by $\text{cl}(R)$ its *closure* in $\mathbb{R}^2_+$ and by $\text{int}(R)$ its *interior*. We shall denote the *support* of a function $g : \mathbb{R}_+ \mapsto \mathbb{R}_+$ by

$$\text{supp}(g) = \text{cl}(\{x \in \mathbb{R}_+ : g(x) > 0\}).$$

The process $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}$ jumps into the region $\mathbf{\Gamma}$ (resp., $S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$) if the process N jumps while $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}$ is in the region $S^{-1}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$ (resp., $S^{-(n+1)}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$). Clearly, if the process $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}$ can never leave the region $S^{-1}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$ before a jump, then the value functions $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ and $V_1(\cdot,\cdot)$ in (5.1) must coincide on the region $S^{-1}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$.

9.3. **Proposition.** *Suppose that*

$$\forall n \in \mathbb{N} : \quad (\phi_0, \phi_1) \in S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) \quad \Longrightarrow \quad (x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1)) \in S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}), \quad t \in [0,\infty) \tag{9.4}$$

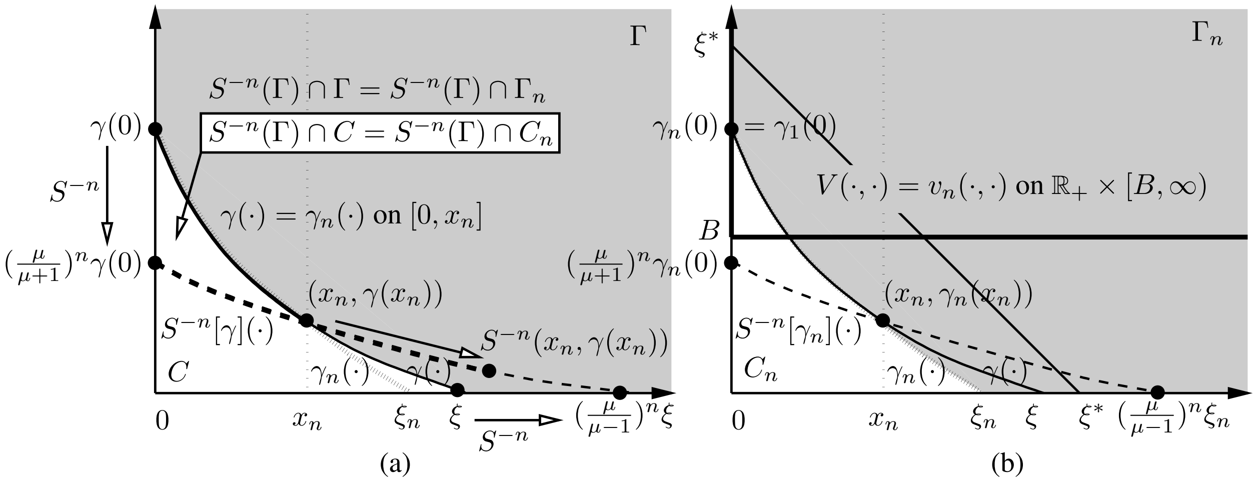


FIGURE 5. Here we assume that (9.4) holds. In (a), the dashed curve is the non-zero part of the boundary function $S^{-n}[\gamma](\cdot)$ of the region $S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$, see (9.6). The region $S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$ is obtained by "shifting" $\mathbf{\Gamma}$ to "down and right." At $x = x_n$, the functions $\gamma(\cdot)$ and $S^{-n}[\gamma_n](\cdot)$ meet for the first time, see (9.9). By Proposition 9.3, the value functions $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ and $V_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ are equal on $S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$. Therefore, the boundry functions $\gamma(\cdot)$ and $\gamma_n(\cdot)$ coincide on $[0, x_n]$ (the thick continuous curve). The image under S^{-n} of the common part stretches beyond $[0, x_n]$ (the thick dashed curve). Hence, the triangular region on $[0, x_n]$ belongs to both $S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) \cap \mathbf{C}$ and $S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}_n) \cap \mathbf{C}_n$. In (b), we describe how to calculate $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ on $\mathbb{R}_+ \times [B, \infty)$ for any $B > 0$ by the three-step method on page 43. Here, the number n is the smallest satisfying (9.9).

holds. Then for every $n \in \mathbb{N}$, *we have*

$$\left\{ \begin{array}{c} V(\phi_0, \phi_1) = V_n(\phi_0, \phi_1) = V_{n+1}(\phi_0, \phi_1) = \cdots \quad \textit{for every } (\phi_0, \phi_1) \in S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) \\ S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) \cap \mathbf{\Gamma} = S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) \cap \mathbf{\Gamma}_n = S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) \cap \mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1} = \cdots \\ S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) \cap \mathbf{C} = S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) \cap \mathbf{C}_n = S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) \cap \mathbf{C}_{n+1} = \cdots \end{array} \right\}. \tag{9.5}$$

Since $\mathbf{\Gamma}$ and $\mathbf{\Gamma}_n$ are convex and closed, and $S(\cdot,\cdot)$ is a linear mapping, the sets $S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$ and $S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}_n)$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ are convex and closed. The sets $\mathbf{\Gamma}$ and $\mathbf{\Gamma}_n$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ are the epigraphs of the continuous functions $\gamma(\cdot)$ and $\gamma_n(\cdot)$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ in Proposition 9.3, respectively. Therefore,

$$\begin{aligned} S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) &= \{(x, y) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : y \geq S^{-n}[\gamma](x)\} \quad \text{and} \\ S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}_n) &= \{(x, y) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : y \geq S^{-n}[\gamma_n](x)\} \end{aligned} \tag{9.6}$$

are the epigraphs of the functions $S^{-n}[\gamma](\cdot)$ and $S^{-n}[\gamma_n](\cdot)$ for every $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$. These functions are decreasing, continuous and convex. In fact,

$$S^{-n}[\gamma](x) = \left(\frac{\mu}{\mu+1}\right)^n \gamma\left(\left(\frac{\mu-1}{\mu}\right)^n x\right), \quad x \in \mathbb{R}_+, \; n \in \mathbb{Z}, \tag{9.7}$$

and the function $S^{-n}[\gamma_n](\cdot)$ is obtained by replacing γ with γ_n in (9.7). The support of the functions $S^{-n}[\gamma](\cdot)$ and $S^{-n}[\gamma_n](\cdot)$ are

$$\operatorname{supp}(S^{-n}[\gamma]) = \left[0, \left(\frac{\mu}{\mu-1}\right)^n \xi\right] \quad \text{and} \quad \operatorname{supp}(S^{-n}[\gamma_n]) = \left[0, \left(\frac{\mu}{\mu-1}\right)^n \xi_n\right] \tag{9.8}$$

respectively, for every $n \in \mathbb{Z}$. By Proposition 9.1, the functions $S^{-n}[\gamma](\cdot)$ and $S^{-n}[\gamma_n](\cdot)$ are strictly decreasing on their supports; see Figure 5.

Since $S^{-n}[\gamma](0) = (\mu/(\mu+1))^n \gamma(0) < \gamma(0)$ and $S^{-n}[\gamma](\xi) > 0 = \gamma(\xi)$ for every $n \in \mathbb{N}$, the functions $S^{-n}[\gamma](\cdot)$ and $\gamma(\cdot)$ intersect, and

$$x_n(\gamma) \triangleq \min\{x \in \mathbb{R}_+ : S^{-n}[\gamma](x) = \gamma(x)\} \in (0, \infty), \quad n \in \mathbb{N}. \tag{9.9}$$

9.4. **Corollary.** *Suppose that (9.4) holds. Then $x_n \equiv x_n(\gamma) = x_n(\gamma_k)$, $k \geq n \in \mathbb{N}$, and*

$$S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) \cap \mathbf{C} \cap ([0, x_n] \times \mathbb{R}_+) = S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}_k) \cap \mathbf{C}_k \cap ([0, x_n] \times \mathbb{R}_+), \; k \geq n, \quad n \in \mathbb{N}. \tag{9.10}$$

Particularly, we have $\gamma(x) = \gamma_n(x)$ for every $x \in [0, x_n]$, and

$$V(x,y) = V_n(x,y) \quad \text{for every } (x,y) \in S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}_n) \cap \mathbf{C}_n \cap ([0, x_n] \times \mathbb{R}_+), \; n \in \mathbb{N}. \tag{9.11}$$

Proof. Let us fix any $k \geq n \in \mathbb{N}$. Since the value functions $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ and $V_k(\cdot,\cdot)$ are equal on the region $S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$ by Proposition 9.3, the boundaries of the regions $\mathbf{\Gamma}$ and $\mathbf{\Gamma}_k$ coincide in the region $S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$. Particularly, we have

$$\gamma(x) = \gamma_k(x) \quad \text{for every } x \in [0, x_n(\gamma)] \tag{9.12}$$

since $S^{-n}[\gamma](x) < \gamma(x)$ for every $x \in [0, x_n(\gamma))$. Therefore,

$$S^{-n}[\gamma](x) = S^{-n}[\gamma_k](x) \quad \text{for every } x \in \left[0, \left(\frac{\mu}{\mu-1}\right)^n x_n(\gamma)\right] \supset [0, x_n(\gamma)], \tag{9.13}$$

Now, (9.12) and (9.13) imply that $x_n(\gamma) = x_n(\gamma_k)$, and (9.6) implies that (see also Figure 5 for the case $k = n$)

$$S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) \cap \mathbf{C} \cap ([0, x_n(\gamma)] \times \mathbb{R}_+) = S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}_k) \cap \mathbf{C}_k \cap ([0, x_n(\gamma)] \times \mathbb{R}_+).$$

The equality (9.11) follows immediately from Proposition 9.3. □

The identity in (9.11) suggests that, in a *finite number of iterations* of (8.1), we can find the restrictions of the value function $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ and the continuation region $\mathbf{C}$ to the set $\mathbb{R}_+ \times [B,\infty)$ for any $B>0$, when the condition (9.4) holds:

Step A.1: Calculate the value function $v_1(0,y)$ for every $y \in [0,\xi^*]$, and determine $\gamma(0) = \gamma_1(0) = \inf\{y \in \mathbb{R}_+ : v_1(x,y) = 0\} \in (0,\xi^*)$; see (9.3), Corollary 9.4 and Figure 5.

Step A.2: Given any $B>0$, find the smallest $n \in \mathbb{N}$ such that

$$B > \left(\frac{\mu}{\mu+1}\right)^n \gamma_1(0) = \left(\frac{\mu}{\mu+1}\right)^n \gamma_n(0) = S^{-n}[\gamma_n](0). \tag{9.14}$$

Because every $S^{-m}[\gamma_m](\cdot)$, $m \in \mathbb{N}$ is decreasing, this implies $\mathbb{R}_+ \times [B,\infty) \subset S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}_n)$; see (9.6). We also have $n \le \min\{m \in \mathbb{N} : B > (\mu/(\mu+1))^m \xi^*\}$ since $\gamma_1(0) \in (0,\xi^*)$.

Step A.3: Calculate $v_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ for every $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+ \backslash D$ by (8.1), where D is as in (6.1). By (9.1), $D \subseteq \mathbf{\Gamma}_n$ and $v_n \equiv 0$ on D.

Then the value functions $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ and $v_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ are equal on $\mathbb{R}_+ \times [B,\infty)$ and $(\mathbb{R}_+ \times [B,\infty)) \cap \mathbf{C} = (\mathbb{R}_+ \times [B,\infty)) \cap \mathbf{C}_n$. See also Figure 5(b).

The next lemma implies that we can calculate the exact value function $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ under condition (9.4) on the set $\mathbb{R}_+ \times (0,\infty)$ along an increasing sequence of sets $\mathbb{R}_+ \times [B_n,\infty)$, and on $\mathbb{R}_+ \times \{0\}$ by the continuity of the function $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ on $\mathbb{R}_+^2$.

9.5. **Lemma.** *Suppose that (9.4) holds. Let ξ^* be the same number as in the definition of the region D in (6.1). Then $\lim_{n\to\infty} S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) = \mathbb{R}_+ \times (0,\infty)$, and*

$$\mathbb{R}_+ \times \left[\left(\frac{\mu}{1+\mu}\right)^n \cdot \xi^*, +\infty\right) \subseteq S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}), \quad n \in \mathbb{N}. \tag{9.15}$$

Proof. Recall from (9.1) that $\mathbb{R}_+ \times [\xi^*,\infty) \subset \mathbb{R}_+^2 \backslash D \subset \mathbf{\Gamma}$. The rectangle on the lefthand side in (9.15) is the same set as $S^{-n}\big(\mathbb{R}_+ \times [\xi^*,\infty)\big) \subset S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$. But, (9.15) implies that $\mathbb{R}_+ \times (0,\infty) \subseteq \underline{\lim}_{n\to\infty} S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$.

On the other hand, for every $x \in \mathbb{R}_+$, there exists number $N(x)$ such that $S^n(x,0) = ((1-1/\mu)^n x, 0) \notin \mathbf{\Gamma}$, $n \ge N(x)$. Then $(x,0) \notin S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$ for every $n \ge N(x)$. This implies that $\overline{\lim}_{n\to\infty} S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) \subseteq \mathbb{R}_+ \times (0,\infty)$. ☐

9.6. **Remark.** Every set $S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ is separated from its complement by the strictly decreasing, convex and continuous function $S^{-n}[\gamma](x)$, $x \in [0,(\mu/(\mu-1))^n \xi]$. Therefore, the condition (9.4) will be satisfied, for example, if the mappings $t \mapsto x(t,\phi_0)$, $t \in \mathbb{R}_+$ and $t \mapsto y(t,\phi_1)$, $t \in \mathbb{R}_+$ are increasing for every $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2$. We have seen on page 20 that this is always the case when λ is "large".

Thus, if λ is "large", then there is a sequence of sets $\mathbb{R}_+ \times [B_n, \infty)$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$, increasing to $\mathbb{R}_+ \times (0,\infty)$ in the limit, such that $V(\cdot,\cdot) = v_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ on $\mathbb{R}_+ \times [B_n, \infty)$ for every $n \in \mathbb{N}$. See also page 49 below.

10. The boundaries of the stopping regions

We shall show that the optimization in (8.1) can be avoided in principle, and $v_1, v_2, \ldots$ can be calculated by integration.

Note that we obtain $Jv_n(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)$ in (8.1) by integrating the function $[g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](\cdot,\cdot)$ along the curve $u \mapsto (x(u,\phi_0), y(u,\phi_1))$ on $u \in [0,t]$; see (5.3). Therefore, the infimum in (8.1) is determined by the the excursions of $u \mapsto (x(u,\phi_0), y(u,\phi_1))$, $u \in \mathbb{R}_+$ into the regions where the sign of the continuous mapping $[g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](\cdot,\cdot)$ is negative and positive.

10.1. **Lemma.** *For every $n \in \mathbb{N}$, we have*

$$A_n \triangleq \{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : [g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x,y) < 0\} \subseteq \mathbf{C}_{n+1}. \tag{10.1}$$

Proof. Let $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in A_n$. Since the function $u \mapsto [g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x(u,\phi_0), y(u,\phi_1))$ is continuous, there exists some $t = t(\phi_0,\phi_1) > 0$ such that

$$Jv_n(t,\phi_0,\phi_1) = \int_0^t e^{-(\lambda+\mu)u}[g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x(u,\phi_0), y(u,\phi_1))du < 0.$$

Therefore, $v_{n+1}(\phi_0,\phi_1) = J_0 v_n(\phi_0,\phi_1) \le Jv_n(t,\phi_0,\phi_1) < 0$, and $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbf{C}_{n+1}$. $\square$

For certain cases, the regions A_n and $\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$ coincide, that is, the continuation region $\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$ for $v_{n+1}(\cdot,\cdot)$ can be found immediately when the value function $v_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ is available. Then $v_{n+1} \equiv 0$ on $\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1} = \mathbb{R}_+^2 \backslash \mathbf{C}_{n+1}$, and we calculate $v_{n+1}(\cdot,\cdot)$ on $\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$ by the integration

$$\begin{aligned} v_{n+1}(\phi_0,\phi_1) &= Jv_n(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)\Big|_{t=r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)} \\ &= \int_0^{r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)} e^{-(\lambda+\mu)u}[g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x(u,\phi_0), y(u,\phi_1))du, \qquad (\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbf{C}_{n+1}, \end{aligned} \tag{10.2}$$

of the function $[g+\mu \cdot v_n \circ S](\cdot,\cdot)$ over the curve $(x(\cdot,\phi_0), y(\cdot,\phi_1))$ until the exit time $r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)$, see (5.14), of the continuous (and deterministic) curve $u \mapsto (x(u,\phi_0), y(u,\phi_1))$, $u \in \mathbb{R}_+$ from the continuation region $\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$.

The region A_n in (10.1) has properties very similar to those of the continuation region $\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$, compare Lemma 10.2 and Proposition 9.1. For example, both sets are separated from their complements by a strictly decreasing, convex and continuous function which stays flat on the x-axis for all large x values.

For every $n \in \mathbb{N}$, let us define the function $a_n : \mathbb{R}_+ \mapsto \mathbb{R}_+$ by

$$a_n(x) \triangleq \inf\{y \in \mathbb{R}_+ : (x, y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ \backslash A_n\} = \inf\{y \in \mathbb{R}_+ : [g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x, y) \geq 0\}. \tag{10.3}$$

The function $a_n(\cdot)$ is finite since, given any $x \in \mathbb{R}_+$, we have $[g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x, y) > 0$ for every large $y \in \mathbb{R}_+$. Recall that the function $v_n(\cdot, \cdot)$ equals zero outside the bounded region $\mathbf{C}_n$. The linear mapping $S : \mathbb{R}^2_+ \mapsto \mathbb{R}^2_+$ in (5.8) is increasing in both x and y. The affine mapping $g : \mathbb{R}^2_+ \mapsto \mathbb{R}$ in (4.12) is also increasing and grows unboundedly in both x and y.

Similarly, given any large $x \in \mathbb{R}_+$, $[g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x, y) \geq 0$ for every $y \in \mathbb{R}_+$. Therefore, $a_n(x) = 0$ for every $x \in [M, \infty)$ for some $M \in \mathbb{R}_+$, and the smallest number M

$$\alpha_n \triangleq \inf\{x \geq 0 : a_n(x) = 0\} \qquad \text{is finite.} \tag{10.4}$$

The set $\mathbb{R}^2_+ \backslash A_n = \{(x, y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ : [g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x, y) \geq 0\}$ is convex and closed since $v_n(\cdot, \cdot)$ is concave and continuous, $S(\cdot, \cdot)$ is linear, and $g(\cdot, \cdot)$ is affine. Because $\mathbb{R}^2_+ \backslash A_n$ is the epigraph of $a_n(\cdot)$, this implies that $a_n(\cdot)$ is a convex and continuous mapping from $\mathbb{R}_+$ into $\mathbb{R}_+$.

The function $a_n(\cdot)$ does not vanish identically on $\mathbb{R}_+$; in particular, $a_n(0) > 0$ since the continuous function $[g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x, y)$ is strictly negative at $(x, y) = (0, 0)$:

$$[g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](0, 0) = g(0, 0) + \mu \cdot v_n(0, 0) \leq g(0, 0) = -\frac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2} < 0.$$

Because $a_n(\cdot)$ is continuous, this implies that the number α_n in (10.4) is strictly positive. Since $a_n(\cdot)$ is convex and vanishes for every large $x \in \mathbb{R}_+$, it is *strictly decreasing* on $[0, \alpha_n)$, and equals zero on $[\alpha_n, \infty)$.

10.2. **Lemma.** *For every $n \in \mathbb{N}$, there are a number $\alpha_n \in (0, \infty)$ and a strictly decreasing, convex and continuous mapping $a_n : [0, \alpha_n] \mapsto \mathbb{R}_+$ such that $a_n(\alpha_n) = 0$, and*

$$\{(x, a_n(x));\, x \in [0, \alpha_n]\} = \left\{(x, y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+;\, [g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x, y) = 0\right\}. \tag{10.5}$$

Moreover, the continuous mapping $(x, y) \mapsto [g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x, y)$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ is strictly increasing in each argument, and for every $n \in \mathbb{N}$

$$\{(x, y) \in [0, \alpha_n) \times \mathbb{R}_+;\, y < a_n(x)\} = \left\{(x, y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+;\, [g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x, y) < 0\right\} \equiv A_n. \tag{10.6}$$

Next, we shall relate the regions A_n in (10.1) and $\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$, and their boundaries $a_n(\cdot)$ and $\gamma_{n+1}(\cdot)$, respectively, for every $n \in \mathbb{N}$.

Using the characterization of the stopping regions $\mathbf{\Gamma}_n$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ in Proposition 9.1 in terms of the switching curves $\gamma_n(\cdot)$, the exit time $r_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ in Corollary 5.8 can be expressed as

$$r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1) = \inf\big\{t>0 : y(t,\phi_1) = \gamma_{n+1}\big(x(t,\phi_0)\big)\big\}, \qquad (\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}_+^2, \tag{10.7}$$

since the functions $x(\cdot,\phi_0)$ and $y(\cdot,\phi_1)$ in (4.8) are continuous. Because every $\gamma_{n+1}(\cdot)$, $n\in\mathbb{N}$ is bounded, the function $r_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ is finite. Thus

$$0 < r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1) < \infty \quad \text{for every } (\phi_0,\phi_1)\in \mathbf{C}_{n+1}.$$

Therefore, the (smallest) minimizer $r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ of the function $t\mapsto Jv_n(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)$, see (5.13), is an interior point of $(0,\infty]$ for every $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$, and the derivative $\partial Jv_n(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)/\partial t$ vanishes at $t=r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)$. Using (5.3) and (10.7) gives

$$\begin{aligned} 0 &= \Big[g+\mu\cdot v_n\circ S\Big]\Big(x(t,\phi_0),y(t,\phi_1)\Big)\Big|_{t=r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)} \\ &= \Big[g+\mu\cdot v_n\circ S\Big]\Big(x(t,\phi_0),\gamma_{n+1}\big(x(t,\phi_0)\big)\Big)\Big|_{t=r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)}, \qquad (\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbf{C}_{n+1}. \end{aligned} \tag{10.8}$$

Let us denote the *boundary* of $\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}$ by

$$\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1} \triangleq \{(x,\gamma_{n+1}(x)) : x\in[0,\xi_{n+1}]\}, \tag{10.9}$$

and define the *entrance* and *exit* boundaries of $\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}$ by

$$\begin{aligned} \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1} &\triangleq \Big\{\big(x(r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_0),\gamma_{n+1}(y(r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_1))\big),\ \text{for some } (\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbf{C}_{n+1}\Big\}, \\ \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1} &\triangleq \Big\{(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1} : (x(t,\phi_0),y(t,\phi_1))\in\mathbf{C}_{n+1},\ t\in(0,\delta] \text{ for some } \delta>0\Big\}, \end{aligned} \tag{10.10}$$

respectively. The paths $t\mapsto (x(t,\phi_0),y(t,\phi_1))$ starting at some $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$ enters the region $\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}$ (for the first time) at the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$. Similarly, for every $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1}$, the path $t\mapsto\big(x(t,\phi_0),y(t,\phi_1))\big)$ exits $\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}$ immediately.

10.3. **Remark.** By Lemma 10.5 below, the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$ is a subset of the boundary ∂A_n of the region A_n in (10.1). Clearly, the curve $t\mapsto(x(t,\phi_0),y(t,\phi_1))$ starting at any $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}\subseteq\partial A_n$ cannot return immediately into the region A_n (otherwise $Jv_n(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)<0$ for some $t>0$ and $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$). In the theory of Markov processes, every element of $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$ (resp., $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1}$) is a regular boundary point of the domain A_n (resp., the interior of $\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}$) with respect to the process $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}$.

10.4. **Remark.** Observe that for every $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1}$, the quantity $r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ in (5.14) is the *return time* of the curve $t\mapsto(x(t,\phi_0),y(t,\phi_1))$ to the stopping region $\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}$ and is also strictly positive. Therefore, the first order necessary optimality condition in (10.8) also hold on the exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1}$. Thus,

(10.11)
$$0 = \Big[g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S\Big]\Big(x(t,\phi_0), \gamma_{n+1}\big(x(t,\phi_0)\big)\Big)\Big|_{t=r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)}, \quad (\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbf{C}_{n+1} \cup \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1}.$$

10.1. **The entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$.** Since all of the functions in (10.11) are continuous, (10.11) and the definition of the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$ in (10.10) imply

$$[g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S]\,(x,y) = 0, \qquad (x,y) \in \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}. \tag{10.12}$$

The next lemma immediately follows from (10.12), Lemma 10.2 and the continuity of the function $[g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](\cdot,\cdot)$.

10.5. **Lemma.** *For every $n \in \mathbb{N}$, let $\alpha_n \in \mathbb{R}_+$ and $a_n : \mathbb{R}_+ \mapsto \mathbb{R}_+$ be the same as in Lemma 10.2. Then* $\mathrm{cl}(\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}) \subseteq \{(x, a_n(x)) : x \in [0,\alpha_n]\}$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$.

10.6. **Corollary.** *For any $n \in \mathbb{N}$, if the equality $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1} = \mathrm{cl}(\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1})$ holds, then*

$$\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1} = \{(x, a_n(x)) : x \in [0,\alpha_n]\}. \tag{10.13}$$

In other words, $\xi_{n+1} = \alpha_n$, and $\gamma_{n+1}(x) = a_n(x)$ for every $x \in [0,\xi_{n+1}] \equiv [0,\alpha_n]$, and

$$\mathbf{C}_{n+1} = \{(x,y) : [g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x,y) < 0\}. \tag{10.14}$$

Proof. By Lemma 10.5, $\{(x,\gamma_{n+1}(x)) : x \in [0,\xi_{n+1}]\} = \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1} \subseteq \{(x,a_n(x)) : x \in [0,\alpha_n]\}$. Since both $\gamma_{n+1}(\cdot)$ and $a_n(\cdot)$ are strictly decreasing, continuous functions which equal zero at the righthand point of their domains, they must be identical. Finally,

$$\begin{aligned}\mathbf{C}_{n+1} &= \mathbb{R}^2_+ \backslash \mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1} = \{(x,y) \in [0,\xi_{n+1}) \times \mathbb{R}_+ : y < \gamma_{n+1}(x)\} \\ &= \{(x,y) \in [0,\alpha_n) \times \mathbb{R}_+ : y < a_n(x)\} = \{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ : [g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x,y) < 0\},\end{aligned}$$

where the last equality follows from (10.6). □

If the disorder arrival rate λ is large, then every point on the stopping boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}$ of the stopping region $\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}$ belongs to the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$, see Section 11. Therefore, the stopping boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}$ for the value function $v_{n+1}(\cdot,\cdot)$ is determined as in Corollary 10.6, as soon as the value function $v_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ is calculated. Using this observation, the main solution method described at the beginning of Section 8 can be tailored into a more efficient algorithm, see Section 11 and Figure 6.

The exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1}$ may not always be nonempty. If it is nonempty, it is also determined by the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$, and the general solution method can be similarly enhanced in this case, see Section 12.

10.2. **The exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1}$.** Using the semigroup property in (4.9) of the functions $x(\cdot,\cdot)$ and $y(\cdot,\cdot)$, and a change of variable, we obtain

$$(10.15)\qquad Jv_n(t,\phi_0,\phi_1) = -e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t}Jv_n(-t,x(t,\phi_0),y(t,\phi_1)),\qquad t\in\mathbb{R}_+,\ (\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}^2_+.$$

Substituting in (5.12) $w(\cdot,\cdot)=v_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ and the identity above give

$$(10.16)\quad J_tv_n(\phi_0,\phi_1) = e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t}\left[v_{n+1}(x(t,\phi_0),y(t,\phi_1)) - Jv_n(-t,x(t,\phi_0),y(t,\phi_1))\right],\qquad t\in\mathbb{R}_+,\ (\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}^2_+.$$

Since $J_{r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)}v_n(\phi_0,\phi_1) = v_{n+1}(\phi_0,\phi_1)$, and $v_{n+1}(x(r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_0),y(r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_1)) = 0$, evaluating the equality in (10.16) at $t=r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ gives

$$(10.17)\qquad v_{n+1}(\phi_0,\phi_1) = \left[-e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t}Jv_n(-t,x(t,\phi_0),y(t,\phi_1))\right]\Big|_{t=r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)},\quad (\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}^2_+.$$

Recall from Section 10.1 that $(x(r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_0),y(r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_1))\in\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$ for every $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbf{C}_{n+1}\cup\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1}$. Therefore, (10.17) implies that we can both calculate the value function $v_{n+1}(\cdot,\cdot)$ and find the continuation region $\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$ by backtracking the curves $t\mapsto(x(-t,\phi_0), y(-t,\phi_1))$ from every point $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$ on the entrance boundary. Let us define

$$(10.18)\qquad \left\{\begin{array}{l}\widehat{r}(\phi_0,\phi_1)\triangleq\inf\{t\ge 0:(x(-t,\phi_0),y(-t,\phi_1))\notin\mathbb{R}^2_+\}\\ \widehat{r}_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)\triangleq\inf\{t\in(0,\widehat{r}(\phi_0,\phi_1)]:-Jv_n(-t,\phi_0,\phi_1)\ge 0\}\end{array}\right\},\ (\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}^2_+,\ n\in\mathbb{N}_0,$$

where the infimum of an empty set is infinity. Since the mapping $t\mapsto Jv_n(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)$ is continuous, we have $Jv_n(-\widehat{r}_n(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_0,\phi_1)=0$ if $0<\widehat{r}_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)<\infty$.

10.7. **Lemma.** *The entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$ determines the exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1}$, the continuation region $\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$, and the value function $v_{n+1}(\cdot,\cdot)$ on $\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$:*

$$\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1} = \left\{(x(-t,\phi_0),y(-t,\phi_1))\Big|_{t=\widehat{r}_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)}:(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}\ \textit{and}\ \widehat{r}_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)\le\widehat{r}(\phi_0,\phi_1)\right\},$$

$$\mathbf{C}_{n+1} = \left\{(x(-t,\phi_0),y(-t,\phi_1)):(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}\ \textit{and}\ t\in(0,\widehat{r}_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)\wedge\widehat{r}(\phi_0,\phi_1)]\right\}\setminus\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1},$$

and for every $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$

$$v_{n+1}(x(-t,\phi_0),y(-t,\phi_1)) = -e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t}Jv_n(-t,\phi_0,\phi_1),\quad t\in(0,\widehat{r}_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)\wedge\widehat{r}(\phi_0,\phi_1)].$$

11. Case I revisited: efficient methods for "large" post-disorder arrival rates

This is Case I on page 20 where $\lambda \geq [1-(1+m)(c/2)]^+$ is "large", and the sample-paths of both components of the process $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}} = [\widetilde{\Phi}^{(0)}, \widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)}]^{\mathrm{T}}$ increase between the jumps; see also Figure 2(a). By the relation (4.10), the deterministic functions $t \mapsto x(t,\phi_0)$, $t \in \mathbb{R}_+$ and $t \mapsto y(t,\phi_1)$, $t \in \mathbb{R}_+$ are strictly increasing for every $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2$.

By Remark 9.6, the identity in (9.11) between the value functions $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ and $V_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ on the set $S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}_n) \cap \mathbf{C}_n \cap ([0,x_n]\times\mathbb{R}_+)$ holds for every $n \in \mathbb{N}$. Thus, we can find the value function $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ by calculating $V_n(\cdot,\cdot)$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ using steps 1-3 on page 43. This method can be improved further. We shall show that the optimization in each iteration of (8.1) can be avoided, and the value function $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ may be calculated in one pass over the continuation region $\mathbf{C}$; see Figure 6.

Since the boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}$ of the stopping region $\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}$ is a (strictly) decreasing continuous curve, every point in the set $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}\cap\mathrm{int}(\mathbb{R}_+^2)$ is accessible from some point in the continuation region $\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$. Therefore, we have $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1} = \mathrm{cl}(\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1})$ for every $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$. By Corollary 10.6, the set A_n in (10.1) and the continuation region $\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$ (and their boundaries) coincide for every $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$.

If the value function $v_n(\cdot,\cdot) \equiv V_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ for some $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$ is already calculated, then the boundary of the continuation region $\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$ becomes immediately available as in (10.13). In fact, (10.5) and (10.14) imply

$$S(\mathbf{C}_{n+1}) = \left\{(x,y)\in\mathbb{R}_+^2 : v_n(x,y) < \left[-\frac{1}{\mu}\cdot g\circ S^{-1}\right](x,y)\right\}, \tag{11.1}$$

$$S(\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}) = \left\{(x,y)\in\mathbb{R}_+^2 : v_n(x,y) = \left[-\frac{1}{\mu}\cdot g\circ S^{-1}\right](x,y)\right\}. \tag{11.2}$$

The set on the righthand side in (11.2) is a strictly decreasing, convex and continuous curve in $\mathbb{R}_+^2$, and it is the same as

$$\begin{aligned} S(\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}) &= S(\text{the boundary of the set } \mathrm{epi}(\gamma_{n+1})\cap([0,\xi_{n+1}]\times\mathbb{R}_+)) \\ &= \text{the boundary of the set } \mathrm{epi}(S[\gamma_{n+1}])\cap\left(\left[0,\frac{\mu-1}{\mu}\,\xi_{n+1}\right]\times\mathbb{R}_+\right) \\ &= \left\{(x,S[\gamma_{n+1}](x));x\in\left[0,\frac{\mu-1}{\mu}\,\xi_{n+1}\right]\right\}. \end{aligned} \tag{11.3}$$

If we know $v_n(\cdot,\cdot)$, then we can determine the set in (11.2) of all points $(x,y)\in\mathbb{R}^2_+$ satisfying

$$v_n(x,y)=\left[-\frac{1}{\mu}\cdot g\circ S^{-1}\right](x,y)\equiv -\frac{x}{\mu-1}-\frac{y}{\mu+1}+\frac{\lambda}{c\mu}\sqrt{2}, \tag{11.4}$$

and obtain the boundary function $\gamma_{n+1}(\cdot)$ after the transformation of this set by S^{-1}. Then we can calculate the (smallest) minimizer $r_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ of (8.1) by the relation (10.7), and the value function $v_{n+1}(\cdot,\cdot)$ by (10.2). We can continue in this manner to find the value functions $v_{n+2}(\cdot,\cdot)$, $v_{n+3}(\cdot,\cdot),\cdots$. This method saves us from an explicit search for the solution $r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ of the minimization problem in (8.1) for every $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$:

Step B.0: Initialize $n=0$, $v_0(\cdot,\cdot)\equiv 0$.

Step B.1: Find the region

$$B_n\triangleq\left\{(x,y)\in\mathbb{R}^2_+: v_n(x,y)<-\frac{x}{\mu-1}-\frac{y}{\mu+1}+\frac{\lambda}{c\mu}\sqrt{2}\right\},\qquad n\in\mathbb{N}. \tag{11.5}$$

Step B.2: Determine the continuation region $\mathbf{C}_{n+1}=S^{-1}(B_n)$ by the transformation of B_n under S^{-1}.

Step B.3: Calculate the value function $v_{n+1}(\cdot,\cdot)$ on $\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$ by using (10.2) and (10.7).

Step B.4: Set n to $n+1$ and go to **Step B.1**.

In fact, we can do much better than this. After $n\in\mathbb{N}$ iterations, we find both $v_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ *and* $V(\cdot,\cdot)$, $v_{n+1}(\cdot,\cdot)$, $v_{n+2}(\cdot,\cdot),\cdots$ on the subset

$$Q_n\triangleq S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}_n)\cap\mathbf{C}_n\cap([0,x_n]\times\mathbb{R}_+) \tag{11.6}$$

$$=\left\{(x,y)\in[0,x_n]\times\mathbb{R}_+: S^{-n}[\gamma_n](x)\le y<\gamma_n(x)\right\},\qquad n\in\mathbb{N} \tag{11.7}$$

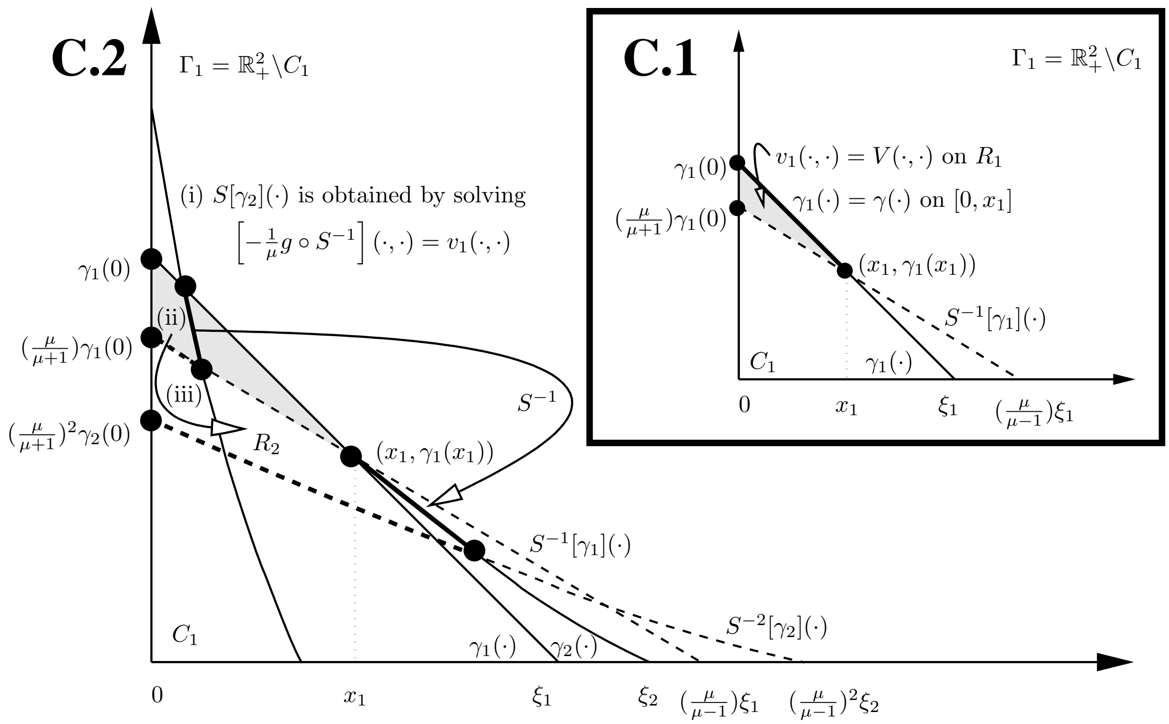
of $\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$ by Corollary 9.4; see also Figure 5. Therefore, we need to determine only the set

$$R_{n+1}\triangleq Q_{n+1}\backslash Q_n,\quad n\in\mathbb{N}\qquad (R_1\equiv Q_1) \tag{11.8}$$

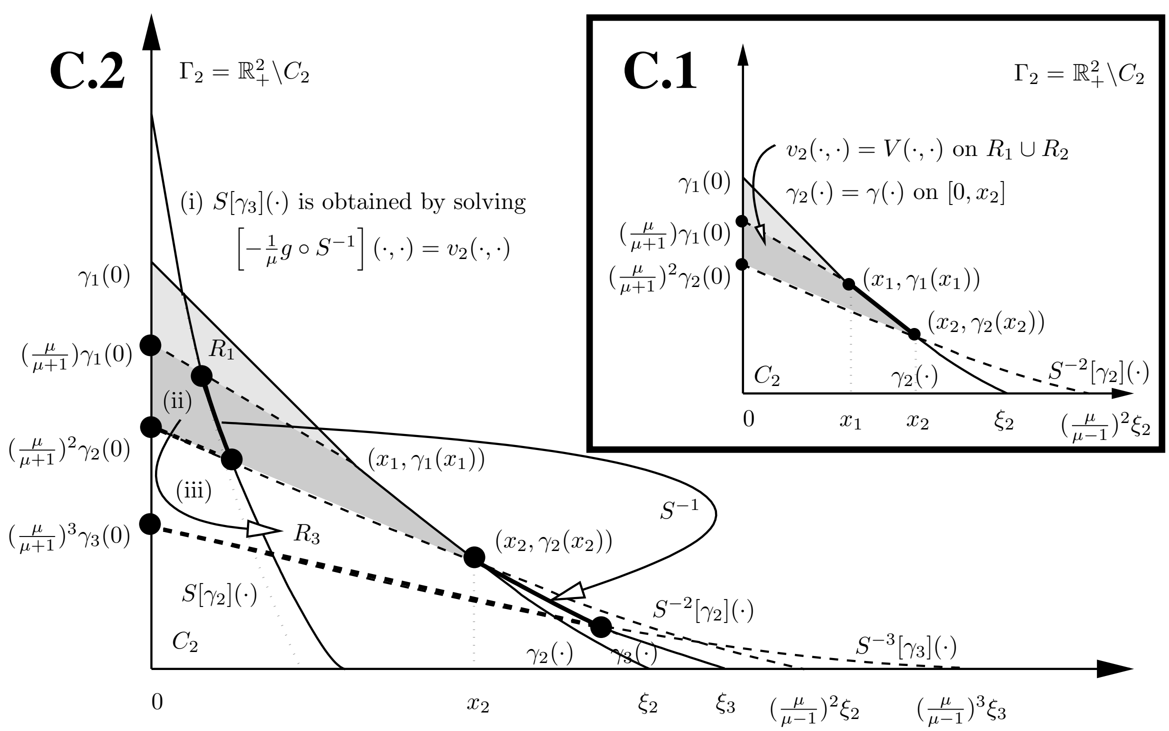
in **Step B.2**, and calculate the value function $v_{n+1}(\cdot,\cdot)$ only on this set in **Step B.3**. By Lemma 9.5, this modified method calculates $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ (and all $V_n(\cdot,\cdot)$, $n\in\mathbb{N}$ simultaneously) on any given set $\mathbb{R}_+\times(0,B)$, $B>0$ in finite number of iterations. We shall describe this modified method on page 52 after establishing a few facts below. Several steps of the method are also illustrated in Figure 6.

Since $v_0\equiv 0$, setting $n=0$ in (11.4) gives a straight line; substituting $(x,y)=(x,S[\gamma_1](x))$ and comparing this with $S(\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1)$ in (11.3) give

$$S[\gamma_1](x)=-\frac{\mu+1}{\mu-1}x+\frac{\mu+1}{\mu}\cdot\frac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2},\quad x\in\operatorname{supp}(S[\gamma_1])=\left[0,\frac{\mu-1}{\mu}\cdot\frac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2}\right], \tag{11.9}$$



(a) $n = 0$ in Step C.1



(b) $n = 1$ in Step C.1.

FIGURE 6. Case I: λ is "large." The illustration of Method C, see page 52: Steps C.1 and C.2 when (a) $n = 0$, and for (b) $n = 1$ in Step C.1.

and $\xi_1 = (\lambda/c)\sqrt{2}$. Using (9.7), we find

$$\gamma_1(x) = S^{-1}[S[\gamma_1]](x) = -x + \frac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2}, \qquad x \in [0, \xi_1] = \left[0, \frac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2}\right]. \tag{11.10}$$

The function $S^{-1}[\gamma_1](\cdot)$ is affine, and intersects with $\gamma_1(\cdot)$ at $x_1 \equiv x_1(\gamma_1) = (\lambda/c)(\sqrt{2}/2)$, see (9.9). By Corollary 9.4 and Remark 9.6, the boundary of the stopping region on $[0, x_1]$ is

$$\gamma(x) = \gamma_1(x) = -x + \frac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2}, \qquad x \in [0, x_1] \equiv \left[0, \frac{\lambda\sqrt{2}}{c} \cdot \frac{1}{2}\right]; \tag{11.11}$$

see the inset in Figure 6(a). Hence, the boundaries of the optimal stopping region $\mathbf{\Gamma}$ and the stopping regions $\mathbf{\Gamma}_n$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ stick on the upper half of the hypotenuse of the rectangular triangle $\{(x, y) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : g(x, y) \leq 0\} \equiv \mathrm{cl}(\mathbf{C}_0)$.

11.1. **Proposition.** *Fix any $n \in \mathbb{N}$. The functions in $\mathcal{S}_n \triangleq \left(S^{-k}[\gamma_k]\right)_{k=1}^n$ do not intersect inside the continuation region $\mathbf{C}_n = \{(x, y) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : y < \gamma_n(x)\}$. The function $S[\gamma_{n+1}](\cdot)$ intersects with each function in $\mathcal{S}_n \cup \{\gamma_n\}$ pairwise exactly once.*

The same conclusions hold when every γ_k, $k = 1, \ldots, n$ in the proposition is replaced with γ; this can be verified using the elementary properties of convex functions and the affine structure of the boundary function $\gamma(\cdot)$ in (11.11); see Bayraktar, Dayanik and Karatzas (2004a) for the details. Then the proof of Proposition 11.1 follows easily from Corollary 9.4. We are now ready to give a better version of method B on page 50 to calculate each $v(\cdot, \cdot)$ and the boundary function $\gamma(\cdot)$. Recall that $S^{-n}[\gamma_n](\cdot)$ and $x_n(\gamma_n)$ are defined by (9.7) and (9.9). The steps C.1 and C.2 below are illustrated in Figure 6 for $n = 0$ and $n = 1$.

Step C.0: Initialize $n = 0$, $x_0 = 0$, $v_0(\cdot, \cdot) \equiv 0$ and the region R_1 as in (11.8).

Step C.1: Calculate the value function $V(\phi_0, \phi_1) = v_{n+1}(\phi_0, \phi_1)$ for every $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in R_{n+1}$ using (10.2) and (10.7).

Step C.2: Set n to $n + 1$.

(i) Determine the set

$$\left\{(x, y) \in R_n : v_n(x, y) = -\frac{x}{\mu - 1} - \frac{y}{\mu + 1} + \frac{\lambda}{c\mu}\sqrt{2}\right\} \tag{11.12}$$

of points in R_n which satisfy (11.4). This is the intersection of the set in (11.3) and R_n. Namely, it is the section of the strictly decreasing, convex and continuous curve $x \mapsto S[\gamma_{n+1}](x)$ contained in R_n.

(ii) Find the subset of R_n enclosed between the vertical y-axis and the curve in (11.12). This is the intersection $R_n \cap B_n$ of the sets R_n and B_n in (11.5).

(iii) Find the set $R_{n+1} = S^{-1}(R_n \cap B_n)$ in (11.8) by applying the transformation $S^{-1}(\cdot,\cdot)$ to the set found in (ii).
The region R_{n+1} is enclosed between the y-axis from left, the S^{-1}-transformation of the curve in (11.12) from right. This right boundary of R_{n+1} extends the boundary $\gamma(\cdot) \equiv \gamma_{n+1}(\cdot)$ from the previous iteration into the region $S^{-(n+1)}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) \equiv S^{-(n+1)}(\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1})$.

(iv) Go to **Step C.1**.

12. The smoothness of the value functions and the stopping boundaries

The general method described at the beginning of this section evaluates the integrals $Jv_n(\cdot,\phi_0,\phi_1)$ in (8.2) of the function $[g+\mu\cdot v_n\circ S](\cdot,\cdot)$ along the curves $(x(\cdot,\phi_0),y(\cdot,\phi_1))$ in $\mathbb{R}^2_+$ in order to calculate the value function $v_{n+1}(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ as in (8.1). For an accurate implementation of this method, it may be useful to know how smooth the integrand, or essentially the value function $v_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ is.

The smoothness of the value function $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ may also allow us to formulate the original optimal stopping problem in (4.12) as a free-boundary problem. Then, in principle, we can calculate the value function $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ directly, by solving a partial differential equation, as the next proposition suggests.

12.1. **Proposition.** *Suppose that there is a bounded and continuous function* $w:\mathbb{R}^2_+\mapsto(-\infty,0]$ *which is continuously differentiable on* $\mathbb{R}^2_+\backslash\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}$, *and whose first-order derivatives are locally bounded near the boundary* $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}=\{(x,\gamma(x)):x\in[0,\xi]\}$. *Moreover,*

$$(\widetilde{\mathcal{A}}-\lambda)w(x,y)+g(x,y)=0, \qquad (x,y)\in\mathbf{C}, \tag{12.1}$$

$$w(x,y)=0, \qquad (x,y)\in\mathbf{\Gamma}, \tag{12.2}$$

$$(\widetilde{\mathcal{A}}-\lambda)w(x,y)+g(x,y)>0, \qquad (x,y)\in\mathbf{\Gamma}\backslash\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}, \tag{12.3}$$

$$w(x,y)<0, \qquad (x,y)\in\mathbf{C}, \tag{12.4}$$

where $\widetilde{\mathcal{A}}$ *is the infinitesimal generator in (7.4) of the process* $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}$ *acting on the continuously differentiable functions.*

Suppose also that the sample-paths of the process $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}=(\widetilde{\Phi}^{(0)},\widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)})$ *spend zero time on the boundary* $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}$ *almost surely, i.e.,*

$$\mathbb{E}_0^{\phi_0,\phi_1}\left[\int_0^\infty 1_{\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}}(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_t)dt\right]=0, \qquad (\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}^2_+. \tag{12.5}$$

If the convex function $\gamma(\cdot)$ *is also Lipschitz continuous on* $[0,\xi]$, *then* $w(\cdot,\cdot)=V(\cdot,\cdot)$ *on* $\mathbb{R}^2_+$.

Proof. Similar to the proof of Theorem 10.4.1 in Øksendal(1998, p. 215). □

Under certain conditions, we are able to show that the bounded, concave and continuous value functions $v_n(\cdot,\cdot)$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $V(\cdot,\cdot)$ are continuously differentiable on $\mathbb{R}^2_+ \backslash \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1}$ and $\mathbb{R}^2_+ \backslash \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x$, respectively, and are *not* differentiable on the exit boundaries $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_n$ and $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x$ in (10.10), respectively. The exit boundaries $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_n$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x$, and the entrance boundaries $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_n$ and $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e$ are connected subsets of $\mathbb{R}^2_+$, and

$$\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_n = \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_n \cup \mathrm{cl}(\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_n),\ n \in \mathbb{N} \quad \text{and} \quad \partial\mathbf{\Gamma} = \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x \cup \mathrm{cl}(\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e). \tag{12.6}$$

Moreover, the boundary functions $\gamma_n(\cdot)$ and $\gamma(\cdot)$ are continuously differentiable on their support.

The hypotheses of Proposition 12.1 are satisfied with $w(\cdot,\cdot) \triangleq v(\cdot,\cdot)$ in (5.10). Thus, the function $v(\cdot,\cdot) \equiv V(\cdot,\cdot)$ may be obtained by solving the *variational inequalities* (12.1)-(12.4). This may be a challenging problem since, as we already pointed out above, the *smooth-fit principle* is guaranteed *not to hold* on some part of the free-boundary. We shall not investigate the variational problem here, but give a concrete example with this interesting boundary behavior, and describe our solution method for it.

The main result is Proposition 12.17 below, and it is proven by induction. Here, we shall study the basis of the induction by breaking it down in several lemmas. The proof of the induction hypothesis is very similar, and later we will point out only the major differences.

Let us introduce the continuous mapping $G_n : \mathbb{R}^3_+ \mapsto \mathbb{R}$ defined by

$$G_n(t,\phi_0,\phi_1) \triangleq \Big[g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S\Big](x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1)), \qquad (t,\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}^3_+,\ n \in \mathbb{N}_0, \tag{12.7}$$

Note that (10.2) gives

$$v_{n+1}(\phi_0,\phi_1) = \int_0^{r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)} e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t}\, G_n(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)\, dt, \qquad (\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbf{C}_{n+1},\ n \in \mathbb{N}_0. \tag{12.8}$$

Using (10.11), (10.12) and Lemmas 10.2 and 10.5, we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} (x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1))\Big|_{t=r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)} &\in \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1} \subseteq \{(x, a_n(x)) : x \in [0,\alpha_n]\} \\ &\equiv \left\{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ : [g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x,y) = 0\right\}, \qquad (\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbf{C}_{n+1} \cup \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1}. \end{aligned} \tag{12.9}$$

Therefore, for every $n \in \mathbb{N}$

$$0 = G_n(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)\Big|_{t=r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)}, \qquad (\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbf{C}_{n+1} \cup \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1}. \tag{12.10}$$

Under certain local smoothness and nondegeneracy conditions on the function $G_n(\cdot,\cdot,\cdot)$, the *implicit function theorems* guarantee that the equation $G_n(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)=0$ implicitly determines $t=t_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ in an open neighborhood of every point $(r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_0,\phi_1)$ in $\mathbb{R}_+\times\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$, as a smooth function of the variables (ϕ_0,ϕ_1). Since the continuation region $\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$ has compact closure, a finite subcovering of these open neighborhoods exists. Patching the solutions $t_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ in the finite subcovering gives the global solution, which is smooth and must coincide with the function $r_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ on $\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$.

In the remainder, we shall use the following version of the implicit function theorem; see, e.g., Protter and Morray (1991, Chapter 14), and also Conjecture 12.18 below.

12.2. **Theorem** (Implicit Function Theorem)**.** *Let $A\subseteq\mathbb{R}^m$ be an open set, $F:A\mapsto\mathbb{R}$ be a continuously differentiable function, and $(\bar t,\bar x)\in\mathbb{R}\times\mathbb{R}^{m-1}$ be a point in A such that*

$$F(\bar t,\bar x)=0,\qquad \text{and}\qquad \frac{\partial}{\partial t}F(t,x)\Big|_{(t,x)=(\bar t,\bar x)}\neq 0.$$

Then there exist an open set $B\subseteq\mathbb{R}^{m-1}$ containing the point $\bar x$, and a unique continuously differentiable function $f:B\mapsto\mathbb{R}$ such that $\bar t=f(\bar x)$ and $F(f(x),x)=0$ for all $x\in B$.

Since $v_0(\cdot,\cdot)\equiv 0$, we have

$$G_0(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)=x(t,\phi_0)+y(t,\phi_1)-\frac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2},\qquad (t,\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}_+\times\mathbf{C}_1. \tag{12.11}$$

The function $G_0(\cdot,\cdot,\cdot)$ is continuously differentiable on $\mathbb{R}_+\times\mathbf{C}_1$. By (6.8) in Section 6, its partial derivative

$$D_tG_0(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)=\frac{d}{dt}\left[x(t,\phi_0)+y(t,\phi_1)\right] \tag{12.12}$$

with respect to t-variable may vanish at most once; if this happens, this derivative is strictly negative before and strictly positive after the derivative vanishes; otherwise, it is strictly positive everywhere (see, also, Figure 3). Namely, the function $t\mapsto G_0(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)$ has at most one local minimum for every $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}_+^2$.

12.3. **Lemma.** *Fix any $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbb{R}_+^2$. The function $t\mapsto G_0(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)$ from $\mathbb{R}_+$ into $\mathbb{R}$ has at most one local minimum. It is strictly increasing if there is no local minimum. If there is a local minimum, then the function $G_0(\cdot,\phi_0,\phi_1)$ is strictly decreasing before the minimum and strictly increasing after the minimum.*

12.4. **Lemma.** *The smallest minimizer $r_0(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ in (5.13) is continuously differentiable at every $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbf{C}_1$.*

Proof. The result will follow from Theorem 12.2 applied to the function $G_0(\cdot,\cdot,\cdot)$ on $\mathbb{R}\times\mathbf{C}_1$ at the point $(\bar{t},\bar{x}) = (r_0(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}\times\mathbf{C}_1$. We only need to establish that

$$D_t G_0(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)\Big|_{t=r_0(\phi_0,\phi_1)} \neq 0, \qquad (\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbf{C}_1.$$

Let us fix $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbf{C}_1$ and assume that $D_t G_0(r_0(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_0,\phi_1)=0$. Then the function $t\mapsto G_0(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)$ is strictly decreasing on $t\in[0,r_0(\phi_0,\phi_1)]$ by Lemma 12.3, and

$$G_0(t,\phi_0,\phi_1) > G_0(r_0(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_0,\phi_1) = 0, \qquad t\in[0,r_0(\phi_0,\phi_1)).$$

Therefore, (12.8) implies that $v_1(\phi_0,\phi_1)>0$. This contradicts with our choice of (ϕ_0,ϕ_1) in the continuation region $\mathbf{C}_1$, as well as, the bound $v_1(\cdot,\cdot)\le 0$. □

12.5. **Corollary.** *The value function $v_1(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ is continuously differentiable at every $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbf{C}_1$. For every $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbf{C}_1$,*

$$(12.13)\qquad \begin{aligned} D_{\phi_0}v_1(\phi_0,\phi_1) &= \int_0^{r_0(\phi_0,\phi_1)} e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t} D_{\phi_0}G_0(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)\,dt = \frac{1-e^{-(\mu-1)r_0(\phi_0,\phi_1)}}{\mu-1},\\ D_{\phi_1}v_1(\phi_0,\phi_1) &= \int_0^{r_0(\phi_0,\phi_1)} e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t} D_{\phi_1}G_0(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)\,dt = \frac{1-e^{-(\mu+1)r_0(\phi_0,\phi_1)}}{\mu+1}. \end{aligned}$$

Proof. By (12.8) and Lemma 12.4, the value function $v_1(\cdot,\cdot)$ is continuously differentiable. Using (12.9) after applying the chain-rule to (12.8) with $n=0$ gives the integrals in (12.13). These integrals can be calculated explicitly by using (4.7) or (4.8). □

12.6. **Corollary.** *The the entrance boundary $\partial\boldsymbol{\Gamma}_1^e$ in (10.10) is connected. More precisely,*

$$(12.14)\qquad \partial\boldsymbol{\Gamma}_1^e = \{(x,\gamma_1(x)) : x\in(\xi_1^e,\xi_1)\} \qquad \textit{for some } 0\le\xi_1^e<\xi_1,$$

where ξ_1 is the same as in $[0,\xi_1]=\operatorname{supp}(\gamma_1)$, the support of the boundary function $\gamma_1(\cdot)$, see Proposition 9.1.

12.7. **Corollary.** *The restriction of the boundary function $\gamma_1(\cdot)$ to the interval (ξ_1^e,ξ_1) is continuously differentiable. In fact,*

$$\gamma_1(x) = a_0(x), \quad x\in[\xi_1^e,\xi_1], \qquad \textit{and} \qquad [0,\xi_1]\equiv\operatorname{supp}(\gamma_1)=\operatorname{supp}(a_0)\equiv[0,\alpha_0],$$

where

$$(12.15)\qquad a_0(x) = \left\{ \begin{array}{ll} -x+\dfrac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2}, & x\in\left[0,\dfrac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2}\right)\\ 0, & \textit{elsewhere} \end{array} \right\}$$

is the continuously differentiable boundary function of the region $A_0=\{(x,y)\in\mathbb{R}_+^2 : [g+\mu\cdot v_0\circ S](x,y)<0\}$ in (10.6).

Proof. The function $a_0(\cdot)$ in (12.15) is continuously differentiable on its support $\text{supp}(a_0) = [0, \alpha_0]$, and the result follows from Lemma 10.5 and Corollary 12.6. □

The entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e$ always exists. However, the exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$ may not exist all the time. Next we shall identify the geometry of the exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$ when it exists.

12.8. **Lemma.** *For every $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$, we have $[g + \mu \cdot v_0 \circ S](\phi_0, \phi_1) > 0$. Therefore, $\text{cl}(\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e) \cap \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x = \varnothing$.*

Proof. Suppose that $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$. Let us assume that $[g + \mu \cdot v_0 \circ S](\phi_0, \phi_1) \le 0$. Then $G_0(0, \phi_0, \phi_1) = [g + \mu \cdot v_0 \circ S](\phi_0, \phi_1) \le 0 = G_0(r_0(\phi_0, \phi_1), \phi_0, \phi_1)$, and Lemma 12.3 implies

$$G_0(t, \phi_0, \phi_1) = [g + \mu \cdot v_0 \circ S](x(t, \phi_0), y(t, \phi_1)) < 0, \qquad t \in (0, r_0(\phi_0, \phi_1)).$$

This inequality and (12.8) for $n = 0$ give

$$v_1(\phi_0, \phi_1) = \int_0^{r_0(\phi_0,\phi_1)} e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t} G_0(t, \phi_0, \phi_1) dt < 0,$$

which contradicts with $v_1(\phi_0, \phi_1) = 0$. This proves that $[g + \mu \cdot v_0 \circ S](\phi_0, \phi_1) > 0$ for every $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$. Since the mapping $(x, y) \mapsto [g + \mu \cdot v_0 \circ S](x, y)$ is continuous, we have $[g + \mu \cdot v_0 \circ S](\phi_0, \phi_1) = 0$ for every $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \text{cl}(\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e)$ by Lemmas 10.2 and 10.5. Therefore, $\text{cl}(\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e) \cap \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x = \varnothing$. □

The next corollary is helpful in determining the point $(\xi_1^e, \gamma_1(\xi_1^e)) \equiv (\xi_1^e, a_0(\xi_1^e))$. The region A_n was introduced in Section 10.

12.9. **Corollary.** *The parametric curve*

$$\mathcal{C}_1 \triangleq \mathbb{R}_+^2 \cap \{(x(t, \xi_1^e), y(t, a_0(\xi_1^e))) : t \in \mathbb{R}\} \tag{12.16}$$

is the smallest among all the parametric curves $\mathbb{R}_+^2 \cap \{(x(t, \phi_0), y(t, \phi_1)) : t \in \mathbb{R}\}$, $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2$ that majorize the boundary function $a_0(\cdot)$ of the region $A_0 = \{(x, y) : [g + \mu \cdot v_0 \circ S](x, y) < 0\} = \{(x, y) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : y < a_0(x)\}$.

The curve $\mathcal{C}_1$ and the boundary $\partial A_0 = \{(x, a_0(x)) : x \in [0, \alpha_0]\}$ touch exactly at $(\xi_1^e, a_0(\xi_1^e)) \equiv (\xi_1^e, \gamma_1(\xi_1^e))$ and nowhere else.

Proof. By Corollary 12.7 and Lemma 12.8, we have $(\xi_1^e, a_0(\xi_1^e)) = (\xi_1^e, \gamma_1(\xi_1^e)) \in \text{cl}(\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1) \backslash \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e$. Therefore $(\xi_1^e, a_0(\xi_1^e)) \notin \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e \cup \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$. Hence there exists some $\delta > 0$ such that

$$(x(t, \xi_1^e), y(t, a_0(\xi_1^e))) \in \mathbf{\Gamma}_1 \subseteq \mathbb{R}_+^2 \backslash A_0, \qquad t \in (-\delta, +\delta). \tag{12.17}$$

Recall from (10.18) that $\widehat{r}(\xi_1^e, a_0(\xi_1^e))$ is the exit time of the curve $(x(-t,\xi^e), y(-t, a_0(\xi_1^e)))$, $t \in \mathbb{R}_+$ from $\mathbb{R}_+^2$. Then the function

$$t \mapsto G_0(t, \xi_1^e, a_0(\xi_1^e)) \equiv [g + \mu \cdot v_0 \circ S](x(t,\xi_1^e), y(t, a_0(\xi_1^e))), \qquad t \in [-\widehat{r}(\xi_1^e, a_0(\xi_1^e)), \infty)$$

has a zero at $t = 0$, and is nonnegative for every $t \in (-\delta, \delta)$ by (12.17). Hence it has a local minimum at $(\xi_1^e, a_0(\xi_1^e))$. By Lemma 12.3, the function $G_0(t, \xi_1^e, a_0(\xi_1^e))$ is strictly positive for every $t \neq 0$. Therefore, $y(t, a_0(\xi_1^e)) > a_0(x(t,\xi_1^e))$ for every $t \neq 0$. $\square$

12.10. **Remark.** Since $\mathcal{C}_1 \subset \mathbb{R}_+^2 \backslash A_0$, we have $Jv_0(t, \phi_0, \phi_1) > 0$ for every $t > 0$ and $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathcal{C}_1$. This implies $v_1(\phi_0, \phi_1) = 0$ for every $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathcal{C}_1$. Therefore, $\mathcal{C}_1 \subset \mathbf{\Gamma}_1$.

The curve $\mathcal{C}_1$ divides $\mathbb{R}_+^2$ into two components. Since the continuation region $\mathbf{C}_1$ is connected and contains A_0, the region $\mathbf{C}_1$ is contained in the (lower) component which lays between the curve $\mathcal{C}_1$ and x-axis. Thus the boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1$ is completely below the curve $\mathcal{C}_1$, and they touch at the point $(\xi_1^e, a_0(\xi_1^e)) \equiv (\xi_1^e, \gamma_1(\xi_1^e))$. See Figure 8(a).

Next corollary shows that no points on the boundary $\{(x, a_0(x)) : x \in [0, \xi_1^e)\}$ over the interval $[0, \xi_1^e)$ of the region $A_0 = \{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : [g + \mu \cdot v_0 \circ S](x,y) < 0\}$ is a boundary point for the stopping region $\mathbf{\Gamma}_1$.

12.11. **Corollary.** *For every $x \in [0, \xi_1^e)$, we have $\gamma_1(x) > a_0(x)$ and $[g + \mu \cdot v_0 \circ S](x, \gamma_1(x)) > 0$.*

Proof. If $[0, \xi_1^e) = \varnothing$, then there is nothing to prove. Otherwise, fix any $\phi_0 \in [0, \xi_1^e)$. Assume that $(\phi_0, a_0(\phi_0)) \in \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1$. By Corollary 12.6 and Lemma 12.8, we have $(\phi_0, a_0(\phi_0)) \notin \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e \cup \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$. The same arguments as in the proof of Corollary 12.9 with $(\phi_0, a_0(\phi_0))$ instead of $(\xi_1^e, a_0(\xi_1^e))$ gives that the parametric curve $\{(x(-t,\phi_0), y(-t, a_0(\phi_0))) : t \in [-\widehat{r}(\phi_0, a_0(\phi_0)), \infty)\}$ is the smallest majorant of the boundary function $a_0(\cdot)$, and both curves touch at the point $(\phi_0, a_0(\phi_0))$. But this implies $\phi_0 = \xi_1^e$, a contradiction with our choice of ϕ_0. $\square$

12.12. **Corollary.** *If $\phi_0 \in [0, \xi_1^e)$, then $(\phi_0, \gamma_1(\phi_0)) \in \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$ has an open neighborhood, on the intersection with the continuation region $\mathbf{C}_1$ of which the function $r_0(\cdot,\cdot)$ is bounded and bounded away from zero.*

On the other hand, the function $r_0(\cdot,\cdot)$ is continuous on the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e$: for every $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e$ and every sequence $\{(\phi_0^{(n)}, \phi_1^{(n)})\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}} \subseteq \mathbf{C}_1$ converging to the boundary point (ϕ_0, ϕ_1), we have $\lim_{n\to\infty} r_0(\phi_0^{(n)}, \phi_1^{(n)}) = 0$.

12.13. **Lemma.** *If $\xi_1^e = 0$, then $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1 = \mathrm{cl}(\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e)$. If $\xi_1^e > 0$, then the exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$ is not empty, and $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1 = \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x \cup \mathrm{cl}(\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e)$.*

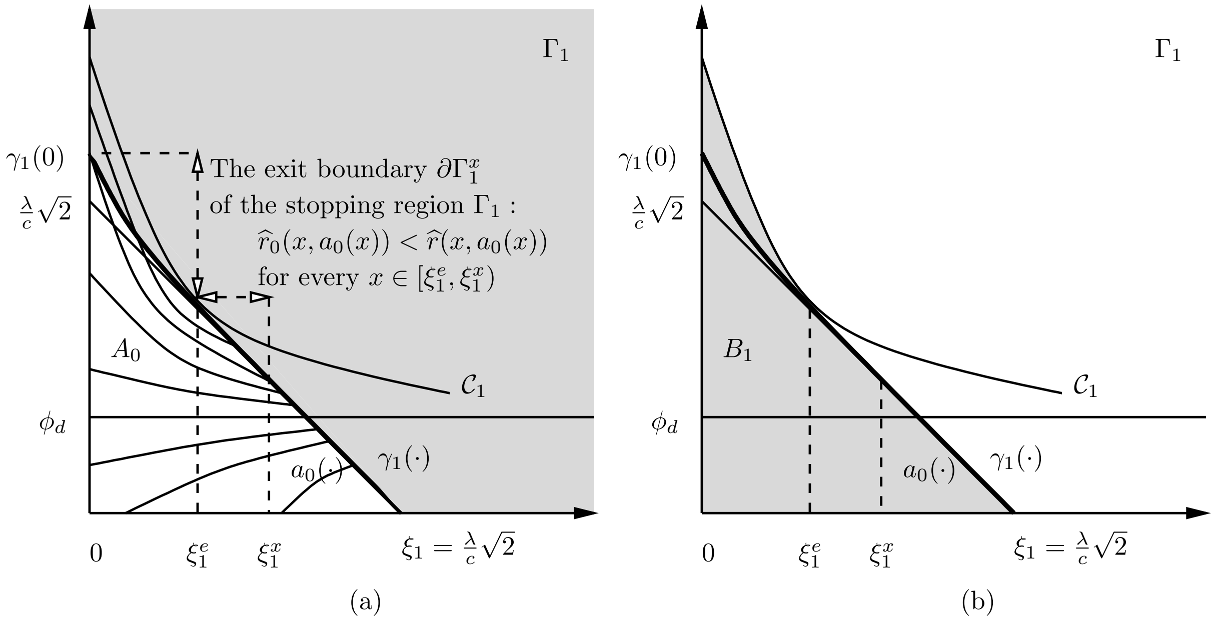


FIGURE 7. (a) The exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$ of the stopping region $\mathbf{\Gamma}_1$ is found by backtracing the parametric curves $t \mapsto (x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1))$ from every point (ϕ_0,ϕ_1) on the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e = \{(x, a_0(x)) : x \in (\xi_1^e, \xi_1)\}$. In (b), the region B_1 defined in the proof of Lemma 12.14 is sketched.

If $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1 \neq \mathrm{cl}(\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e)$, then $\xi_1^e > 0$, and the exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$ is not empty by Lemma 12.13. The characterization of the exit boundary in Lemma 10.7 can be expressed better. It can be easily shown that there exists some $\xi_1^x \in (\xi_1^e, \xi_1)$ such that

$$\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x = \left\{ \Big(x(-t,\phi_0), y(-t, a_0(\phi_0)) \Big) \Big|_{t=\widehat{r}_0(\phi_0, a_0(\phi_0))} : \phi_0 \in (\xi_1^e, \xi_1^x] \right\}.$$

More precisely,

$$\xi_1^x = \inf\{\phi_0 \in [\xi_1^e, \xi_1] : \widehat{r}_0(\phi_0, \gamma_1(x)) \leq \widehat{r}(\phi_0, \gamma_1(x))\}. \tag{12.18}$$

For every $\phi_0 \in (\xi_1^e, \xi_1^x]$, we have $\widehat{r}_0(\phi_0, \gamma_1(\phi_0)) \leq \widehat{r}(\phi_0, \gamma_1(\phi_0))$. See (10.18) and Figure 7(a).

Our next result shows that, the exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x = \{(\phi_0, \gamma_1(\phi_0)) : \phi_0 \in [0, \xi_1^e)\}$ is on a continuously differentiable curve, if it is not empty.

12.14. **Lemma.** *The restriction of the boundary function $\gamma_1(\cdot)$ to the interval $[0, \xi_1^e)$ is continuously differentiable.*

If the value function $v_1(\cdot,\cdot)$ were continuously differentiable on the exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$, then the result would follow from an application of the implicit function theorem to the identity $v_1(\phi_0, \phi_1) = 0$ near the point $(\phi_0, \phi_1) = (\phi_0, \gamma_1(\phi_0))$.

Unfortunately, $v_1(\cdot,\cdot)$ is not differentiable on $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$; see Lemma 12.16. Therefore, we shall first extend the restriction to the set $\mathbf{C}_1 \cup \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$ of the value function $v_1(\cdot,\cdot)$ to a new function $\widetilde{v}_1(\cdot,\cdot)$ on an open set $B_1 \supset \mathbf{C}_1 \cup \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$ such that $\widetilde{v}_1(\cdot,\cdot)$ is continuously differentiable on B_1. We shall then use the identity $\widetilde{v}_1(\phi_0, \gamma_1(\phi_1)) = 0$ as described above.

12.15. **Lemma.** *The boundary function* $\gamma_1(\cdot)$ *is continuously differentiable on the interior of its support* $[0, \xi_1]$.

The next result shows that the value function is not differentiable on the exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$. In fact, as the proof reveals, the left and right partial derivatives are different along the exit boundary. Therefore, the *smooth-fit principle* does not apply to the value function $v_1(\cdot,\cdot)$ along (some part of) the boundary if the exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$ is not empty.

12.16. **Lemma.** *The value function* $v_1(\cdot,\cdot)$ *is continuously differentiable on the entrance boundary* $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e$*, but is* <u>*not*</u> *differentiable on the exit boundary* $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$.

The techniques used above in the analysis of the value function $v_1(\cdot,\cdot)$ and the boundary function $\gamma_1(\cdot)$ can be extended inductively to every function $v_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ and the boundary function $\gamma_n(\cdot)$ if the followings are true for every $n \in \mathbb{N}$:

- $\mathbf{A}_1(n)$**:** For every $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2$, the function $t \mapsto G_n(t, \phi_0, \phi_1)$ in (12.7) from $\mathbb{R}_+$ into $\mathbb{R}$ has at most one local minimum. It is strictly increasing if there is no local minimum. If there is a local minimum, then the function $G_n(\cdot, \phi_0, \phi_1)$ is strictly decreasing before the minimum and strictly increasing after the minimum.
- $\mathbf{A}_2(n)$**:** The function $(x,y) \mapsto [g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x,y)$ is (continuously) differentiable on the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}^e$ of the stopping region $\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1} = \{(x,y) : v_{n+1}(x,y) = 0\}$.

12.17. **Proposition.** *If* $\boldsymbol{A}_1(k)$ *and* $\boldsymbol{A}_2(k)$ *above are true for every* $0 \le k \le n$*, then the followings hold.*

(1) *The value function* $v_{n+1}(\cdot,\cdot)$ *is continuously differentiable on* $\mathbb{R}^2_+ \backslash \mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1}$ *everywhere except the exit boundary* $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1}$*. For every* $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbf{C}_{n+1}$

$$\begin{aligned} D_{\phi_0} v_{n+1}(\phi_0,\phi_1) &= \int_0^{r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)} e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t} D_{\phi_0} G_n(t,\phi_0,\phi_1) du \\ &= \int_0^{r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)} e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t} \left[1 + (\mu-1) D_{\phi_0} v_n \circ S\right](x(u,\phi_0), y(u,\phi_1)) du, \\ D_{\phi_1} v_{n+1}(\phi_0,\phi_1) &= \int_0^{r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)} e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t} D_{\phi_1} G_n(t,\phi_0,\phi_1) du \\ &= \int_0^{r_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)} e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t} \left[1 + (\mu+1) D_{\phi_1} v_n \circ S\right](x(u,\phi_0), y(u,\phi_1)) du. \end{aligned}$$

(2) *The entrance boundary* $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$ *is connected. More precisely,*

$$\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1} = \{(x, a_n(x)) : x \in (\xi^e_{n+1}, \xi_{n+1})\} \qquad \textit{for some } \xi^e_{n+1} \in [0, \xi_{n+1}).$$

The boundary function $a_n(\cdot)$ *of the region* $A_n = \{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ : [g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x,y) < 0\}$ *is continuously differentiable on* (ξ^e_{n+1}, ξ_{n+1})*. Therefore, the boundary function* $\gamma_{n+1}(\cdot) \equiv a_n(\cdot)$ *on* (ξ^e_{n+1}, ξ_{n+1}) *is continuously differentiable.*

(3) *The parametric curve*

$$\mathcal{C}_{n+1} \triangleq \mathbb{R}^2_+ \cap \{(x(t,\xi^e_{n+1}), y(t, a_n(\xi^e_{n+1}))) : t \in \mathbb{R}\}$$

is the smallest among all the parametric curves $\mathbb{R}^2_+ \cap \{(x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1)) : t \in \mathbb{R}\}$, $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+$ *that majorize the boundary function* $a_n(\cdot)$ *of the region* $A_n = \{(x,y) : [g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x,y) < 0\} = \{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ : y < a_n(x)\}$.

The curve $\mathcal{C}_{n+1}$ *and the boundary* $\partial A_n = \{(x, a_n(x)) : x \in [0, \alpha_n]\}$ *touch exactly at* $(\xi^e_{n+1}, a_n(\xi^e_{n+1})) \equiv (\xi^e_{n+1}, \gamma_{n+1}(\xi^e_{n+1}))$ *and nowhere else.*

(4) *If* $\xi^e_{n+1} = 0$*, then* $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1} = \mathrm{cl}(\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1})$*. If* $\xi^e_{n+1} > 0$*, then the exit boundary* $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1}$ *is not empty, and* $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1} = \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1} \cup \mathrm{cl}(\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1})$.

(5) *The boundary function* $\gamma_{n+1}(\cdot)$ *is continuously differentiable on the interior of its support* $[0, \xi_{n+1}]$.

The proof of the proposition is by induction on $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$. The suppositions $\mathbf{A}_1(0)$ and $\mathbf{A}_2(0)$ are always correct; see Lemma 12.3, and note that $[g + \mu \cdot v_0 \circ S](\cdot,\cdot) \equiv g(\cdot,\cdot)$ is continuously differentiable everywhere. All of the claims above are proved for the basis of the induction $n = 0$ before the statement of the proposition. For $n \geq 1$, the proofs are the same with obvious changes, with the exception of the differentiability of $a_n(\cdot)$ in (2).

For $n = 0$, the differentiability of $a_0(x) = -x + (\lambda/c)\sqrt{2}$, $x \in (0, \xi_1)$ was obvious. For $n \geq 1$, the function $a_n(\cdot)$ is not available explicitly. But

$$[g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x, a_n(x)) = 0, \qquad x \in [0, \xi_{n+1}].$$

By $\mathbf{A}_2(n)$, the function $[g+\mu\cdot v_n \circ S](\cdot,\cdot)$ is continuously differentiable on $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1} = \{(x, a_n(x)) : x \in (\xi^e_{n+1}, \xi_{n+1})\}$. Since $y \mapsto [g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x, y)$ is strictly increasing for every $x \in \mathbb{R}_+$, we have

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial y}\, [g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x, y)\Big|_{(x,y)=(x,a_n(x))} > 0, \qquad x \in (\xi^e_{n+1}, \xi_{n+1}).$$

Thus, the function $a_n(\cdot)$ is continuously differentiable on (ξ^e_{n+1}, ξ_{n+1}) by the implicit function theorem.

12.1. **The interplay between the exit and entrance boundaries.** Unfortunately, we were unable to identify fully all the cases where the hypotheses $\mathbf{A}_1(n)$ and $\mathbf{A}_2(n)$ on page 60 are satisfied for every $n \in \mathbb{N}$ (see, though, Section 12.2 for the important case of "large" disorder arrival rate λ and Section 12.3 for another interesting example, where they are satisfied). However, they are the sufficient conditions for Proposition 12.17 to hold, and Proposition 12.17 shows the crucial interplay between the exit and entrance boundaries. We would like to illustrate this interplay briefly; it may be very useful in designing efficient detection algorithms for general Poisson disorder problems. Later, we shall point out how the gap may be closed as an interesting research problem.

In Section 10.2, we showed that both the value functions and the exit boundaries are determined by the entrance boundaries, see Lemma 10.7. More explicitly, if the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$ is obtained somehow, then one can calculate the value function $v_{n+1}(\cdot,\cdot)$ and the exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1}$ by running backwards in time the parametric curves $t \mapsto (x(t, \phi_0), y(t, \phi_1))$ from every point (ϕ_0, ϕ_1) on the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$ and by evaluating the explicit expressions of Lemma 10.7 along the way. On the other hand, the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$ can be found when the value function $v_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ is already calculated. Since $v_0 \equiv 0$ is readily available, the following iterative algorithm will give us every $v_n(\cdot,\cdot)$, $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$ and the boundary functions $\gamma_n(\cdot)$, see also Figure 8:

Step D.0: Initialize $n = 0$, $v_0(\cdot,\cdot) \equiv 0$ on $\mathbb{R}^2_+$. Let $a_0(\cdot)$ be the boundary function of the region $A_0 = \{(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ : [g + \mu \cdot v_0 \circ S](\phi_0, \phi_1) < 0\}$; see (12.15).

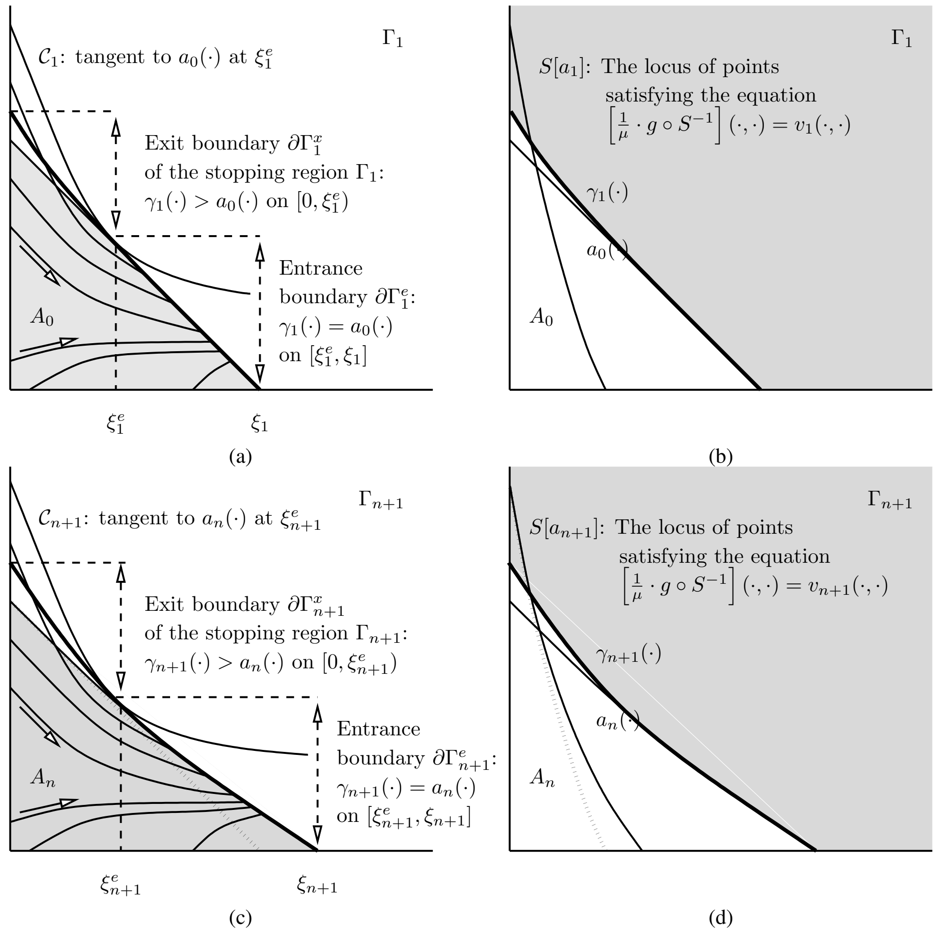


FIGURE 8. For all values of the disorder arrival rate (large or small), both the value functions $v_{n+1}(\cdot,\cdot)$, $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$ and the exit boundaries $\partial\boldsymbol{\Gamma}_{n+1}^x$, $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$ are determined by the entrance boundaries $\partial\boldsymbol{\Gamma}_{n+1}^e$, $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$; see Lemma 10.7. Figures (a) and (b) illustrate **Steps D.1** and **D.2** of **Method D** page 62 for $n = 0$, and Figures (c) and (d) for a general n. In (a), the region $A_0 = \{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : [g + \mu \cdot v_0 \circ S] < 0\}$ is readily available since $v_0 \equiv 0$. There is always a unique number ξ_1^e contained in the support $[0, \xi_1]$ of the boundary function $a_0(\cdot)$ of the region A_0 such that the parametric curve $\mathcal{C}_1 : (x(t, \xi_1^e), y(t, a_0(\xi_1^e)))$, $t \in \mathbb{R}$ does not intersect A_0. The entrance boundary $\partial\boldsymbol{\Gamma}_1^e$ of the stopping region $\boldsymbol{\Gamma}_1$ coincides with the boundary $\{(x, a_0(x)) : x \in (\xi_1^e, \xi_1)\}$ of the region A_0 above the interval (ξ_1^e, ξ_1). If $\xi_1^e > 0$, then the exit boundary $\partial\boldsymbol{\Gamma}_1^x = \boldsymbol{\Gamma}_1 \setminus \mathrm{cl}(\boldsymbol{\Gamma}_1^e)$ is not empty and can be found by backtracing the parametric curves $(x(-t, \phi_0), y(-t, \phi_1))$, $t \in \mathbb{R}_+$ from every entrance boundary point $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \partial\boldsymbol{\Gamma}_1^e$ until the first time $\widehat{r}_n(\phi_0, \phi_1)$ that $Jv_0(-t, \phi_0, \phi_1)$ becomes zero, see **Step D.1** for the details. After the value function $v_1(\cdot,\cdot)$ is calculated in **Step D.1**, the region A_1 and its boundary function $a_1(\cdot)$ is found by a transformation under S^{-1} of the locus in (b) of the points satisfying $[(1/\mu) \cdot g \circ S^{-1}](\cdot,\cdot) = v_1(\cdot,\cdot)$. By reiterating Steps D.1 and D.2 as in (c) and (d) for every $n \in \mathbb{N}$, we obtain all of the value functions v_n, $n \in \mathbb{N}$.

Step D.1: There is unique number $\phi_0 = \xi_{n+1}^e$ in the bounded support $\phi_0 \in [0, \xi_{n+1}]$ of the function $a_n(\cdot)$ such that, for every small $\delta > 0$

$$a_n(x(t,\phi_0)) \le y(t, a_n(\phi_0)), \quad t \in [0,\delta) \text{ if } \phi_0 = 0, \text{ and } t \in (-\delta,\delta) \text{ if } \phi_0 > 0.$$

Equivalently, the parametric curve $\mathcal{C}_{n+1} \triangleq \mathbb{R}_+^2 \cap \{(x(t,\xi_{n+1}^e), y(t, a_n(\xi_{n+1}^e))) : t \in \mathbb{R}\}$ in (3) of Proposition 12.17 majorizes the boundary $\{(x, a_n(x)) : x \in \text{supp}(a_n)\}$ of the region $A_n = \{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : [g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x,y) < 0\}$ everywhere. The entrance boundary of the stopping region $\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1} = \{(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : v_{n+1}(\phi_0,\phi_1) = 0\}$ is given by $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}^e = \{(\phi_0, a_n(\phi_0)) : \phi_0 \in (\xi_{n+1}^e, \xi_{n+1})\}$.

(i) Find the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}^e$.

(ii) For every $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}^e$, take the following steps to calculate the value function $v_{n+1}(\cdot,\cdot)$ on the continuation region $\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$ and the exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}^x$:

(a) Calculate $\widehat{r}(\phi_0,\phi_1) \triangleq \inf\{t \ge 0 : (x(-t,\phi_0), y(-t,\phi_1)) \notin \mathbb{R}_+^2\}$.

(b) If $-Jv_n(-\widehat{r}(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_0,\phi_1) < 0$, then set $\widehat{r}_n(\phi_0,\phi_1) = \infty$. Otherwise, find

$$\widehat{r}_n(\phi_0,\phi_1) \triangleq \inf\{t \in (0, \widehat{r}(\phi_0,\phi_1)] : -Jv_n(-t,\phi_0,\phi_1) \ge 0\}$$

by a bisection search on $(0, \widehat{r}(\phi_0,\phi_1)]$, and add the point

$$(x(-\widehat{r}_n(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_0), y(-\widehat{r}_n(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_1)) \in \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}^x$$

to the exit boundary.

(c) Calculate the value function

$$v_{n+1}(x(-t,\phi_0), y(-t,\phi_1)) = -e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t} Jv_n(-t,\phi_0,\phi_1)$$

along the curve $(x(-t,\phi_0), y(-t,\phi_1))$, $t \in (0, \widehat{r}(\phi_0,\phi_1) \wedge \widehat{r}_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)]$ until it either leaves $\mathbb{R}_+^2$ or hits the exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}^x$.

The union $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}^x \cup \text{cl}(\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}^e) = \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}^x \cup \{(x, a_n(x)) : x \in [\xi_{n+1}^e, \xi_{n+1}]\}$ gives the boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1} = \{(x, \gamma_{n+1}(x)) : x \in [0, \xi_{n+1}]\}$ and the boundary curve $\gamma_{n+1}(\cdot)$, which is strictly decreasing and convex on its support $[0, \xi_{n+1}]$.

(iii) Set $v_{n+1}(\cdot,\cdot) = 0$ on the stopping region $\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1} = \{(x,y) : y \ge \gamma_{n+1}(x)\}$.

Step D.2: Set n to $n+1$. Determine the locus of the points (ϕ_0,ϕ_1) in $\mathbb{R}_+^2$ satisfying the equation

$$\left[\frac{1}{\mu} \cdot g \circ S^{-1}\right](\phi_0,\phi_1) = v_n(\phi_0,\phi_1).$$

This locus is the same as $\{(x, S[a_{n+1}](x)) : x \in \text{supp}(S[a_{n+1}])\}$, see Notation 9.2. Shift it by the linear transformation S^{-1} of (5.8) to obtain the boundary $\{(x, a_n(x)) :$

$x \in \text{supp}(a_n)\}$ of the region $A_n = \{(x, y) : [g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x, y) < 0\}$. Go to **Step D.1**.

12.18. **Conjecture.** The algorithm relies on only two results from Section 12: (i) the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$, $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$ is connected, and (ii) the boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1}$, $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$ is the disjoint union of the exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1}$ and the closure of the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$. Part (ii) was proved by using (i) and the first hypothesis $\mathbf{A}_1(n + 1)$ on page 60, see Lemma 12.13. We conjecture that the hypothesis $\mathbf{A}_1(n + 1)$ always holds for all $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$.

On the other hand, part (i) was proved by using the continuity of the mapping $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \mapsto r_n(\phi_0, \phi_1)$ on the connected continuation region $\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$, see Corollary 12.6. The continuity of the mapping $r_n(\cdot, \cdot)$ followed from its continuous differentiability on $\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$ which we proved by using the implicit function theorem (Theorem 12.2) under hypothesis $\mathbf{A}_2(n + 1)$, see Lemma 12.4. We conjecture that this mapping is always continuous on the continuation region $\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$. This may be proved directly by using a weaker version of the implicit function theorem (see, e.g., Krantz and Parks (2002)) or by using nonsmooth analysis (see, e.g., Clarke et al. (1998)).

12.2. **The regularity of the value functions and the optimal stopping boundaries when the disorder arrival rate λ is "large".** One of the cases where both $\mathbf{A}_1(n)$ and $\mathbf{A}_2(n)$ on page 60 are satisfied for every $n \in \mathbb{N}$ is when the disorder arrival rate λ is "large", see Section 4.3 and Figure 2(a).

Suppose that $\lambda \geq [1 - (1 + \mu)(c/2)]^+$. Then the parametric curve $t \mapsto (x(t, \phi_0), y(t, \phi_1))$, and therefore, the mapping $t \mapsto G_n(t, \phi_0, \phi_1)$, $t \in \mathbb{R}_+$ are strictly increasing for every $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+$ and $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$, see Lemma 10.2. Hence, $\mathbf{A}_1(n)$ always holds for every $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$.

For the same reason, all of the exit boundaries $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_n$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ are empty, see Section 11. Since $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_1$ is empty, the value function $v_1(\cdot, \cdot)$ is continuously differentiable everywhere. Therefore, $\mathbf{A}_2(1)$ holds. Then Proposition 12.17 implies that $v_2(\cdot, \cdot)$ is continuously differentiable everywhere since $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_2$ is empty. Therefore, $\mathbf{A}_2(2)$ holds, and so on.

12.19. **Corollary** ("Large" disorder arrival rate: smooth solutions of reference optimal stopping problems)**.** *Suppose that* $\lambda \geq [1 - (1 + \mu)(c/2)]^+$. *Then* $\boldsymbol{A}_1(n)$ *and* $\boldsymbol{A}_2(n)$ *hold for every* $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$, *and Proposition 12.17 applies. Particularly, for every* $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$

(1) *the value function* $v_{n+1}(\cdot, \cdot)$ *is continuously differentiable everywhere,*
(2) *the exit boundary* $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1}$ *is empty, and* $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1} = \text{cl}(\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1})$,

(3) *the boundary function $\gamma_{n+1}(\cdot)$ is continuously differentiable on the interior of its support $[0, \xi_{n+1}]$. Thus, the function $\gamma_{n+1}(\cdot)$ coincides with the boundary function*

$$a_0(x) = -x + \frac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2} \qquad \text{of the region } A_0 \text{ on the interval } \left[0, \frac{\lambda\sqrt{2}}{2c}\right],$$

and fits smoothly to this function at the right end-point of the same interval.

The last part of (3) in the corollary follows from (11.11) in Section 11 and Proposition 12.17. Recall also from Remark 9.6 that, if the disorder arrival rate λ is "large", then there is an increasing sequence of sets $\mathbb{R}_+ \times [B_n, \infty)$ whose limit is $\mathbb{R}_+ \times (0,\infty)$, and $v(\cdot,\cdot) = v_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ on $\mathbb{R}_+ \times [B_n, \infty)$ for every $n \in \mathbb{N}$. Therefore, Corollary 12.19 implies immediately that the value function $v(\cdot,\cdot)$ and the boundary function $\gamma(\cdot)$ are continuously differentiable on $\mathbb{R}_+ \times (0,\infty)$ and on the interior of the support $[0,\xi]$ of the function $\gamma(\cdot)$, respectively.

To prove that $v(\cdot,\cdot)$ is continuously differentiable on $(0,\infty) \times \{0\}$, we shall again use the implicit function theorem. By Proposition 5.6 and Remark 5.10, we have

$$v(\phi_0, 0) = Jv(r(\phi_0,0), \phi_0, 0) = \int_0^{r(\phi_0,0)} e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t} G(t,\phi_0,0)dt, \qquad \phi_0 \in \mathbb{R}_+.$$

The function $(t,\phi_0) \mapsto G(t,\phi_0,0) \triangleq [g + \mu \cdot v \circ S](x(t,\phi_0), y(t,0))$ is continuously differentiable on $(0,\infty) \times (0,\infty)$ since $v(\cdot,\cdot)$ is continuously differentiable on $\mathbb{R}_+ \times (0,\infty)$ and $(x(t,\phi_0), y(t,0)) \in (0,\infty) \times (0,\infty)$ for every $t > 0$. Moreover, the partial derivative $(t,\phi_0) \mapsto D_{\phi_0} G(t,\phi_0,0)$ is locally bounded on $(0,\infty)\times(0,\infty)$ by Corollary 5.4. Therefore, the function $(t,\phi_0) \mapsto Jv(t,\phi_0,0)$ is continuously differentiable on $(0,\infty)\times(0,\infty)$ and

$$\begin{aligned} D_{\phi_0} Jv(t,\phi_0,0) &= \int_0^t e^{-(\lambda+\mu)u} D_{\phi_0} G(t,\phi_0,0) du \\ &= \int_0^t e^{-(\mu+1)u} \left[1 + (\mu - 1)\, D_{\phi_0} v \circ S\right](x(u,\phi_0), y(u,0)) du, \quad (t,\phi_0) \in \mathbb{R}_+ \times (0,\infty). \end{aligned}$$

Since $v(\phi_0, 0) \equiv 0$ for every $\phi_0 \in [\xi, \infty)$, it is continuously differentiable on (ξ,∞). To show that it is differentiable on $(0,\xi)$, it is enough to prove that the mapping $\phi_0 \mapsto r(\phi_0, 0)$ from $(0,\xi)$ to $\mathbb{R}_+$ is continuously differentiable. Observe that, if we define

$$F(t,\phi_0) \triangleq \gamma(x(t,\phi_0)) - y(t,0), \qquad (t,\phi_0) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2,$$

then $F(r(\phi_0,0),\phi_0) = 0$ for every $\phi_0 \in [0,\xi]$. For every $\phi_0 \in (0,\xi)$, the function $F(\cdot,\cdot)$ is continuously differentiable in some neighborhood of $(r_0(\phi_0,0),\phi_0)$ since $x(r(\phi_0,0),\phi_0) \in$

$(0,\xi)$ and $\gamma(\cdot)$ is continuously differentiable on $[0,\xi)$. Moreover, at every $(t,\phi_0)\in\mathbb{R}^2_+$, where $D_tF(t,\phi_0)$ exists, we have

$$D_tF(t,\phi_0)=\gamma'(x(t,\phi_0))D_tx(t,\phi_0)-D_ty(t,0)<0,$$

since $\gamma(\cdot)$ is decreasing, $t\mapsto x(t,0)$ and $t\mapsto x(t,\phi_0)$ are strictly increasing. Then the implicit function theorem implies that $\phi_0\mapsto r(\phi_0,0)$, and therefore, $\phi_0\mapsto v(\phi_0,0)=Jv(r(\phi_0,0),\phi_0,0)$ is continuously differentiable on $\phi_0\in(0,\xi)$. A similar argument as in 12.12 shows that $\phi_0\mapsto r(\phi_0,0)$ is continuous at $\phi_0=\xi$ and $\lim_{\phi_0\uparrow\xi} r(\phi_0,0)=0$. By Leibniz rule (see, e.g., Protter and Morrey(1991, Theorem 11.1, p. 286)), the limit of the derivative

$$\begin{aligned}D_{\phi_0}v(\phi_0,0)&=\underbrace{D_tJv(r(\phi_0,0),\phi_0,0)}_{=0\text{ for every }\phi_0\in[0,\xi)}+D_{\phi_0}Jv(r(\phi_0,0),\phi_0,0)\\&=\int_0^{r(\phi_0,0)}e^{-(\mu+1)u}\left[1+(\mu-1)\,D_{\phi_0}v\circ S\right](x(u,\phi_0),y(u,0))du,\qquad \phi_0\in(0,\xi)\end{aligned}$$

of the value function $v(\cdot,\cdot)$ at $(\phi_0,0)$ as ϕ_0 increases to ξ equals zero. Recall that, since $r(\phi_0,0)>0$ for every $\phi_0\in[0,\xi)$, the derivative of $t\mapsto Jv(t,\phi_0,0)$ on the righthand side vanishes at its minimizer $t=r(\phi_0,0)$. Thus, the left and right derivatives of the concave function $\phi_0\mapsto v(\phi_0,0)$ at $\phi_0=\xi$,

$$D^-_{\phi_0}v(\xi,0)=\lim_{\phi_0\uparrow\xi}D^-_{\phi_0}v(\phi_0,0)=\lim_{\phi_0\uparrow\xi}D_{\phi_0}v(\phi_0,0)=0=D^+_{\phi_0}v(\xi,0),$$

are equal. This completely shows that the function $\phi_0\mapsto v(\phi_0,\cdot)$ from $(0,\infty)$ to $\mathbb{R}$ is continuously differentiable. Hence the value function $v(\cdot,\cdot)$ is continuously differentiable on $\mathbb{R}_+\times\{0\}$.

12.20. **Corollary** ("Large" disorder arrival rate: smooth solution of the main optimal stopping problem)**.** *Suppose that $\lambda\geq[1-(1+\mu)(c/2)]^+$. Then*

(1) *the value function $v(\cdot,\cdot)$ is continuously differentiable everywhere,*
(2) *the boundary function $\gamma(\cdot)$ is continuously differentiable on the interior of its support $[0,\xi]$. It coincides with the boundary function*

$$a_0(x)=-x+\frac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2}\qquad\text{of the region } A_0 \text{ on the interval } \left[0,\frac{\lambda\sqrt{2}}{2c}\right],$$

and fits smoothly to this function at the right end-point of the same interval,
(3) *the value function $v(\cdot,\cdot)$ is the solution of the variational inequalities in (12.1)-(12.4).*

12.21. **Corollary.** *If $\lambda \geq [1-(1+\mu)(c/2)]^+$, then both the sequence $\{v_n\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ of the value functions and the sequences of their partial derivatives $\{D_{\phi_0} v_n\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ and $\{D_{\phi_1} v_n\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ converge uniformly to the value function v and its partial derivatives $D_{\phi_0} v$ and $D_{\phi_1} v$, respectively.*

Proof. Immediately follows from Theorem 25.7 in Rockafellar (1997, p. 248). □

The results obtained in Section 10 for the functions v_n, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ can be extended easily for the value function $v(\cdot,\cdot)$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$. As in Lemma 10.2, we have

$$A \triangleq \{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ : [g + \mu \cdot v \circ S](x,y) < 0\} = \{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ : y < a(x)\},$$
$$\{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ : [g + \mu \cdot v \circ S](x,y) = 0\} = \{(x,a(x)) : x \in [0,\alpha]\}$$

for some decreasing function $a : \mathbb{R}_+ \mapsto \mathbb{R}_+$ which is strictly decreasing on its finite support $[0,\alpha]$. We have $A \subseteq \mathbf{C}$ all the time, and the equality holds if $\lambda \geq [1-(1+\mu)(c/2)]^+$ since the parametric curves $t \mapsto (x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1))$ increase and do not come back the region A after they leave; see also Section 11. Therefore, $\gamma(\cdot) \equiv a(\cdot)$ and

$$[g + \mu \cdot v \circ S](x,y) > 0, \qquad (x,y) \in \mathbf{\Gamma} \backslash \partial \mathbf{\Gamma}. \tag{12.19}$$

Proof of Corollary 12.20. Only (3) remains to be proven. The function $v : \mathbb{R}^2_+ \mapsto (-\infty, 0]$ is bounded and continuously differentiable. By the definition of the continuation region $\mathbf{C} = \{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ : v(x,y) < 0\}$ and the stopping region $\mathbf{\Gamma} = \mathbb{R}^2_+ \backslash \mathbf{C}$, the (in)equalities (12.2) and (12.4) are satisfied. On the other hand, (12.19) implies

$$[(\widetilde{\mathcal{A}} - \lambda)v + g](\phi_0,\phi_1) = [g + \mu \cdot v \circ S](\phi_0,\phi_1), \qquad (\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbf{\Gamma}$$

is strictly positive for every $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbf{\Gamma} \backslash \partial \mathbf{\Gamma}$, i.e., (12.3) is also satisfied. On the other hand,

$$\begin{aligned}
&[(\widetilde{\mathcal{A}} - \lambda)v + g](\phi_0,\phi_1) = \\
&= D_{\phi_0} v(\phi_0,\phi_1)\left[(\lambda+1)\phi_0 + \frac{\lambda(1-m)}{\sqrt{2}}\right] + D_{\phi_1} v(\phi_0,\phi_1)\left[(\lambda-1)\phi_1 + \frac{\lambda(1+m)}{\sqrt{2}}\right] \\
&\quad + \mu\left[v\left(\left(1-\frac{1}{\mu}\right)\phi_0, \left(1+\frac{1}{\mu}\right)\phi_1\right) - v(\phi_0,\phi_1)\right] - \lambda v(\phi_0,\phi_1) + g(\phi_0,\phi_1) \\
&= D_{\phi_0} v(\phi_0,\phi_1) \cdot D_t x(0,\phi_0) + D_{\phi_1} v(\phi_0,\phi_1) \cdot D_t y(0,\phi_1) - (\lambda+\mu) v(\phi_0,\phi_1) \\
&\quad + [g + \mu \cdot v \circ S](\phi_0,\phi_1) \\
&= \frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left[e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t} v(x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1)) + \int_0^t e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t}[g + \mu \cdot v \circ S](x(u,\phi_0), y(u,\phi_1)) du\right]\Bigg|_{t=0} \\
&= \frac{\partial}{\partial t}\left[e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t} v(x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1)) + Jv(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)\right]\Big|_{t=0}, \qquad (\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbf{C}.
\end{aligned}$$

Observe that the expression enclosed in square brackets in the last equation above equals $v(\phi_0, \phi_1)$ for every sufficiently small $t > 0$ by (5.19) in Remark 5.10. Therefore, the derivative above equals zero, and (12.1) holds. This completes the proof of that the function $v(\cdot, \cdot)$ satisfies the variational inequalities (12.1)-(12.4).

The boundary function $\gamma(\cdot)$ is strictly decreasing on its support. The process $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}$ can have at most countably many jumps, and its sample paths are strictly increasing between the jumps. Therefore, the time that the process $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}$ spends on the boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma} = \{(x, \gamma(x)) : x \in [0, \xi]\}$ equals zero almost surely. Finally, since the derivative of the convex boundary curve $0 \geq \gamma'(x) \geq \gamma'(0+) = a_0(0+) = -1$ is bounded on $x \in (0, \xi)$, it is also Lipschitz continuous on its support. □

Finally, Corollary 12.20 also shows that, for every $\lambda \geq [1 - (1+m)(c/2)]^+$, the smooth restrictions of value function $v_{n+1}(\cdot, \cdot)$ to the continuation region $\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$ and to the stopping region $\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}$ fit to each other smoothly across the smooth boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1} = \{(x, \gamma_{n+1}(x)) : x \in [0, \xi_{n+1}]\}$.

However, if $0 < \lambda < 1 - (1+m)(c/2)$ is small, then the corresponding value function does not have to have the same *smooth-fit property*.

12.3. **Failure of the smooth-fit principle: a concrete example.** Here we shall give a concrete example for a case where the value function fits smoothly across the entrance boundary and fails to fit smoothly across the exit boundary of the optimal stopping region, see Figure 9(d).

Suppose that the disorder arrival rate λ, the pre-disorder arrival rate μ of the observations, the detection delay cost c per unit time, and the expectation $m = \mathbb{E}_0[\Lambda - \mu]$ of the difference $\Lambda - \mu$ between the arrival rates of the observations after and before the disorder are chosen such that

$$
\left\{
\begin{array}{c}
0 < \lambda < 1 - (1+m)(c/2) \\
\dfrac{\mu+1}{\mu}\,\phi_d > \overline{\phi}_1 \\
y < S[a_0](x) = \dfrac{\mu+1}{\mu}\, a_0\left(\dfrac{\mu}{\mu-1}\, x\right), \qquad (x,y) \in \left\{(\phi_0^*, \phi_1^*), (0, \overline{\phi}_1)\right\}
\end{array}
\right\}, \tag{12.20}
$$

where $\phi_d > 0$ is the mean-reversion level in (4.14) of $y \mapsto y(t, \phi_1)$ for every initial condition $\phi_1 \in \mathbb{R}_+$, see Section 4.4. The point

$$
(\phi_0^*, \phi_1^*) = \left(\frac{\lambda}{\sqrt{2}}\left(\frac{1-\lambda}{c} - 1\right), \frac{\lambda}{\sqrt{2}}\left(\frac{1+\lambda}{c} + 1\right)\right) \tag{12.21}
$$

is the intersection point of the straight lines ℓ in (6.7) and $y = a_0(x)$. Recall from (12.15) that $a_0(\cdot)$ is the boundary function of the region $A_0 = \{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : g(x,y) < 0\} \equiv \{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : y < a_0(x)\}$. For every initial point (ϕ_0, ϕ_1) in $\mathbb{R}_+^2$, the sum $t \mapsto x(t,\phi_0) + y(t,\phi_1)$, $t \in \mathbb{R}_+$ of the coordinates of the parametric curve $t \mapsto (x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1))$, $t \in \mathbb{R}_+$ strictly decreases before the parametric curve meets the line ℓ, and strictly increases thereafter, see Lemma 12.3 and (6.8). Finally, the point $(0, \overline{\phi}_1)$ with

$$\overline{\phi}_1 = -\frac{\lambda(1+m)}{\sqrt{2}(\lambda-1)} + \left[\phi_1^* + \frac{\lambda(1+m)}{\sqrt{2}(\lambda-1)}\right]\left[1 + \phi_0^* \frac{\sqrt{2}(\lambda+1)}{\lambda(1-m)}\right]^{-(\lambda-1)/(\lambda+1)} \tag{12.22}$$

is the initial point on the y-axis of the parametric curve $t \mapsto (x(t,0), y(t,\overline{\phi}_1))$, $t \in \mathbb{R}_+$ which passes trough the point (ϕ_0^*, ϕ_1^*) in (12.21). The coordinate $\overline{\phi}_1$ in (12.22) is found by substituting the solution of $x(t^*,0) = \phi_0^*$ for t^* into the equation $y(t^*, \overline{\phi}_1) = \phi_1^*$ and solving the latter for $\overline{\phi}_1$; see also Figure 9(a).

Let us show that, under the conditions in (12.20), the "closedness" property in (9.4) holds. By Lemma 12.3 and (6.8), the curve $\mathcal{C}_1$ in Corollary 12.9 becomes

$$\mathcal{C}_1 = \{(x(t,0), y(t,\overline{\phi}_1)) : t \in \mathbb{R}_+\} \equiv \mathbb{R}_+^2 \cap \{(x(t,\phi_0^*), y(t,\phi_1^*)) : t \in \mathbb{R}\};$$

it is tangent to the broken line $\{(x, a_0(x)) : x \in \mathbb{R}_+\}$ at the point (ϕ_0^*, ϕ_1^*). Therefore, $\xi_1^e = \phi_0^*$ by the same corollary, and the entrance boundary of the stopping region $\mathbf{\Gamma}_1 = \{(x,y) : v_1(x,y) = 0\}$ is $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e = \{(x, a_0(x)) : x \in (\phi_0^*, (\lambda/c)\sqrt{2})\}$ by Corollary 12.6. Moreover, the boundary function $\gamma_1(\cdot)$ of the region $\mathbf{\Gamma}_1 = \{(x, \gamma_1(x)) : \gamma_1(x) \le y\}$ is supported on $[0, (\lambda/c)\sqrt{2}]$ and satisfies

$$\gamma_1(x) = a_0(x), \quad x \in \left[\phi_0^*, \frac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2}\right] \quad \text{and} \quad \gamma_1(x) < y(0, \overline{\phi}_1) = \overline{\phi}_1, \quad x \in [0, \phi_0^*). \tag{12.23}$$

The equality follows from Corollary 12.7, and the inequality follows from Remark 12.10 and that the parametric curve $\mathcal{C}_1$ is decreasing. One can easily see from (12.23) and the second inequality in (12.20) that

$$\begin{aligned} &(0, \phi_d) \in \mathbb{R}_+ \times [\phi_d, \infty) \subset S^{-1}(\mathbf{\Gamma}_1) = \left\{(x, S^{-1}[\gamma_1](x)) : x \in \mathbb{R}_+\right\}, \\ &\phi_d \ge S^{-1}[\gamma_1](0) = \frac{\mu}{\mu+1}\,\gamma_1(0). \end{aligned} \tag{12.24}$$

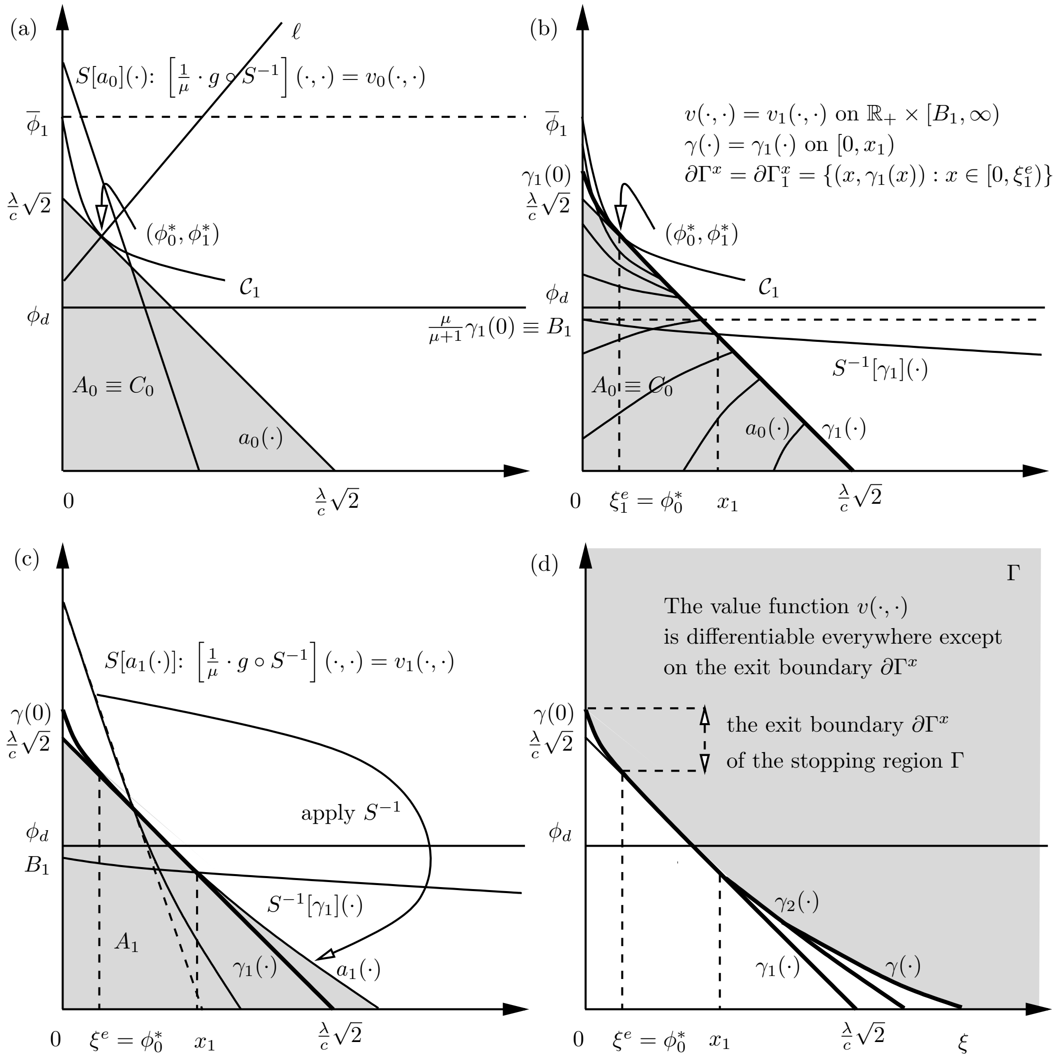


FIGURE 9. (a) shows the location of points (ϕ_0^*,ϕ_1^*) and $(0,\overline{\phi}_1)$ and the line described by the function $S[a_0](\cdot)$. If the sufficient-statistic process $\widetilde{\boldsymbol{\Phi}}$ starts in the region $\mathbb{R}_+\times[\phi_d,\infty)$, then it stays there forever and jumps above the line $y=\overline{\phi}_1$ every time an observation arrives. In (b), one can calculate the value function $v_1(\cdot,\cdot)$ by backtracing the parametric curve $t\mapsto(x(t,\phi_0),y(t,\phi_1))$ from every (ϕ_0,ϕ_1) on the entrance boundary $\partial\boldsymbol{\Gamma}_1^e=\{(x,a_0(x)):x\in(\xi_1^e,(\lambda/c)\sqrt{2})\}$, see Figure 8(a,b). The thick curve above the region A_0 is the boundary function $\gamma_1(\cdot)$ of the stopping region $\boldsymbol{\Gamma}_1$. Since $S^{-1}(\boldsymbol{\Gamma})$ is "closed" in the sense of (9.4), the functions $v(\cdot,\cdot)$ and $v_1(\cdot,\cdot)$ (and therefore, every $v_n(\cdot,\cdot)$, $n\in\mathbb{N}$) coincide on $S^{-1}(\boldsymbol{\Gamma})$. In (c), we recall how to find the region A_1; the calculation of the value function $v_2(\cdot,\cdot)$ and the boundary function $\gamma_2(\cdot)$ is similar to (b), see also Figure 6. Since the exit boundary $\{(x,\gamma(x)):x\in[0,\xi^e)\}$ is the same for all of the functions and is contained in $\mathbb{R}_+\times[\phi_d,\infty)$, the functions $a_1(\cdot)$ and $\gamma_2(\cdot)$ coincide on $[\xi^e,\infty)$. This and the boundary function $\gamma(\cdot)$ of the stopping region $\boldsymbol{\Gamma}=\{(x,y)\in\mathbb{R}_+^2:v(x,y)=0\}$ are sketched in (d).

The restrictions of the value functions $v(\cdot,\cdot)$ and $v_1(\cdot,\cdot)$, and therefore those of the boundaries $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}$ and $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1$, coincide on $\mathbb{R}_+ \times [\phi_d, \infty)$. First, observe that

$$\left\{ \begin{aligned} & x(t,\phi_0) + y(t,\phi_1) \geq x(t,0) + y(t,\overline{\phi}_1) \geq \frac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2} \\ & \text{i.e.,} \quad (x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1)) \notin \mathbf{C}_0,\ t \in \mathbb{R}_+ \end{aligned} \right\}, \qquad (\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+ \times [\overline{\phi}_1, \infty),$$

where $\mathbf{C}_0 = \{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : g(x,y) < 0\}$ is as in (4.13) and coincides with A_0. By the second inequality in (12.20) and the properties of the parametric curves $t \mapsto (x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1))$, $t \in \mathbb{R}_+$ (see Section 4.2), we have

$$(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+ \times [\phi_d,\infty) \quad \Longrightarrow \quad \left\{ \begin{aligned} & S(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+ \times [\overline{\phi}_1, \infty) \subset \mathbb{R}_+ \times [\phi_d,\infty) \\ & (x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1)) \in \mathbb{R}_+ \times [\phi_d,\infty), \quad t \in \mathbb{R}_+ \end{aligned} \right\}.$$

Using the last two displayed equations gives that, if the initial state $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_0$ on a sample-path of the sufficient statistic $\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}} = (\widetilde{\Phi}^{(0)}, \widetilde{\Phi}^{(1)})$ is in $\mathbb{R}_+ \times [\phi_d, \infty)$, then the sample-path stays in the region $\mathbb{R}_+^2 \times [\phi_d,\infty)$ and never returns to the *advantageous* region $\mathbf{C}_0$ after the first jump, see Section 4.1. In fact,

$$v \circ S(\phi_0,\phi_1) = \inf_{\tau\in\mathcal{S}} \mathbb{E}_0^{S(\phi_0,\phi_1)} \left[\int_0^\tau e^{-\lambda u} g(\widetilde{\mathbf{\Phi}}_u) du \right] = 0, \qquad (\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+ \times [\phi_d,\infty),$$

and therefore,

$$\begin{aligned} (12.25) \quad v(\phi_0,\phi_1) = J_0 v(\phi_0,\phi_1) &= \inf_{t\in[0,\infty]} \int_0^t e^{-(\lambda+\mu)u} \overbrace{[g + \mu \cdot v \circ S]}^{\equiv g(\cdot,\cdot)} (x(u,\phi_0), y(u,\phi_1)) du \\ &= J_0 v_0(\phi_0,\phi_1) = v_1(\phi_0,\phi_1), \qquad (\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+ \times [\phi_d,\infty). \end{aligned}$$

The stopping region $\mathbf{\Gamma} = \{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : v(x,y) = 0\}$ and its boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}$ are determined by the value function $v(\cdot,\cdot)$. Then (12.25) implies that the restrictions of the boundaries $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}$ and $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1$ to the region $\mathbb{R}_+ \times [\phi_d,\infty)$ also coincide. Therefore, the first inequality in (12.20) implies

$$\phi_d < \frac{\lambda}{c}\sqrt{2} \leq \gamma_1(0) = \gamma(0), \qquad \text{and} \quad S^{-1}[\gamma](0) \equiv \frac{\mu}{\mu+1}\,\gamma(0) < \phi_d$$

follows from (12.24). Since the boundary function $S^{-1}[\gamma](\cdot)$ of the region $S^{-1}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$ is decreasing (see (9.7)), the second inequality gives

$$\mathbb{R}_+ \times [\phi_d,\infty) \subseteq S^{-1}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) = \{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : S^{-1}[\gamma](x) \leq y\}.$$

But starting at any $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R} \times [0,\phi_d]$, the parametric curves $t \mapsto (x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1))$, $t \in \mathbb{R}_+$ are increasing. Since the boundary functions $S^{-n}[\gamma](\cdot)$ of the regions $S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) =$

$\{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}_+^2 : S^{-n}[\gamma](x) \le y\}$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ are also decreasing, every region $S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ is "closed" in the sense of (9.4). Therefore, **Method A** on page 43 can be used in order to calculate the value function $v(\cdot,\cdot)$ on $\mathbb{R}_+^2$.

12.22. **Corollary.** *Suppose that (12.20) holds. Let $B_n \triangleq [\mu/(\mu+1)]^n \gamma_1(0)$ for every $n \in \mathbb{N}$. Then the sequence $\mathbb{R}_+ \times [B_n, \infty)$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ increases to $\mathbb{R}_+ \times (0,\infty)$, and we have $v(\cdot,\cdot) = v_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ on $\mathbb{R}_+ \times [B_n,\infty)$ for every $n \in \mathbb{N}$.*

Since $(\phi_0^*, \phi_1^*) \in \mathbb{R}_+ \times [\phi_d, \infty) \subseteq \mathbb{R}_+ \times [B_1, \infty)$, the exit boundaries $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$ and $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x$ of the stopping regions $\mathbf{\Gamma}_1$ and $\mathbf{\Gamma}$ are the same, and

$$\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x = \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x = \{(x,\gamma_1(x)) : x \in [0,\xi_1^e)\} \equiv \{(x,\gamma_1(x)) : x \in [0,\phi_0^*)\}.$$

From the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e = \{(x, a_0(x)) : x \in (\phi_0^*, (\lambda/c)\sqrt{2})\}$ of the stopping region $\mathbf{\Gamma}_1$, we can obtain its exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$ and the value function $v_1(\cdot,\cdot)$ on the continuation region $\mathbf{C}_1$ by using **Method D** on page 62, see Figures 8(a,b) and 9(b).

Note also that the value function $v(\cdot,\cdot) \equiv v_1(\cdot,\cdot)$ is continuously differentiable on $\mathbb{R}_+ \times [B_1,\infty) \backslash \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$ and is not differentiable on $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$ by Corollary 12.5 and Lemma 12.16. Let $x_1 \equiv x_1(\gamma_1) = \min\{x \in \mathbb{R}_+ : S^{-1}[\gamma_1](x) = \gamma_1(x)\}$ is the (smallest) intersection point of the functions $S^{-1}[\gamma_1](\cdot)$ and $\gamma_1(\cdot)$ as in (9.9). Then Corollary 9.4 implies

$$\{(x,\gamma(x)) : x \in \mathbb{R}_+\} \cap S^{-1}(\mathbf{\Gamma}_1) = \{(x,\gamma_1(x)) : x \in [0,x_1]\},$$

and the restriction of the boundary function $\gamma(\cdot) \equiv \gamma_1(\cdot)$ to the interval $[0,x_1)$ is continuously differentiable by Lemma 12.15.

Using Corollary 12.22, we can also show that the restrictions of the value function $v(\cdot,\cdot)$ and the boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}$ of the stopping region $\mathbf{\Gamma}$ on the complement of the region $\mathbb{R}_+ \times [B_1,\infty)$ are continuously differentiable.

Since the sequence $\{v_n(\cdot,\cdot)\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ of the value functions increases to the function $v(\cdot,\cdot)$, all of them coincide with $v(\cdot,\cdot) \equiv v_1(\cdot,\cdot)$ on the region $\mathbb{R}_+ \times [B_1,\infty)$. On the region $\mathbb{R}_+ \times [0,B_1)$, they differ, but are continuously differentiable.

In fact, since every parametric curve $t \mapsto (x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1))$, $t \in \mathbb{R}_+$ starting at any point $(\phi_0,\phi_1) \in \mathbb{R}_+ \times [0,\phi_d] \supset \mathbb{R}_+ \times [0,B_1]$ is increasing, the hypothesis $\mathbf{A}_1(n)$ on page 60 holds on the region $\mathbb{R}_+ \times [0,\phi_d]$ for every $n \in \mathbb{N}$.

On the other hand, the third inequality in (12.20) guarantees that hypothesis $\mathbf{A}_2(n)$ on page 60 also holds on $\mathbb{R}_+ \times [0,\phi_d]$ for every $n \in \mathbb{N}$. Indeed, every entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}^e$ coincides with some part of the boundary $\partial A_n = \{(x, a_n(x)) : x \in \mathbb{R}_+\}$ of the region

$A_n = \{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ : [g+\mu\cdot v_n \circ S](x,y) < 0\}$, see Lemma 10.5. Since the sequence $\{a_n(\cdot)\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}_0}$ of the boundary functions is increasing, the third inequality in (12.20) implies

$$y < S[a_0](x) \leq S[a_n](x), \qquad n \in \mathbb{N}_0,\ (x,y) \in \left\{(\phi_0^*, \phi_1^*),\ (0, \overline{\phi}_1)\right\}.$$

Thus, by an induction on $n \in \mathbb{N}_0$, we can easily show that the transformation $S(\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1})$ of the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$ of every stopping region $\mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1}$ is away from the exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1} \equiv \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_1$. Therefore, the function $(x,y) \mapsto [g + \mu \cdot v_n \circ S](x,y)$ is differentiable on the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$. The same induction, as in Section 12.2, will also prove the continuous differentiability of the value functions $v_n(\cdot,\cdot)$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $v(\cdot,\cdot)$ on the region $\mathbb{R}_+ \times [0,\phi_d] \supset \mathbb{R}_+ \times [0, B_1]$, as well as, the continuous differentiability of the restrictions of the boundaries $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_n$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}$ to the set $\mathbb{R}_+ \times [0,\phi_d]$.

12.23. **Corollary.** *Suppose that (12.20) holds. Then the boundary function $\gamma(\cdot)$ of the stopping region $\mathbf{\Gamma} = \{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ : \gamma(x) \leq y\}$ is continuously differentiable on its support $[0,\xi]$. The exit boundary $\mathbf{\Gamma}^x$ is not empty. The value function $v(\cdot,\cdot)$ is continuously differentiable on $\mathbb{R}^2_+ \backslash \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x$, but not differentiable on $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x$.*

The interesting feature of the solutions of the problems covered under condition (12.20) is that the smooth-fit principle is satisfied on one connected subset and violated on another of the same connected and continuously differentiable boundary curve of the optimal stopping region by the value function, which is also continuously differentiable everywhere away from the boundary.

The conditions in (12.20) are satisfied, for example, if $\lambda = 0.15$, $\mu = 1.5$ and $c = 0.7$ and $m = 0.9$. In general, the functions $S^{-1}[a_0](\cdot)$ and $a_0(\cdot)$ always intersect on the line $y = x$. Since $\gamma_1(\cdot) \geq a_0(\cdot)$ and $\gamma_1(\cdot)$ is decreasing, we have $x_1 \leq (\lambda/c)\cdot(\sqrt{2}/2)$. The equality holds if and only if

$$S^{-1}(\phi_0^*, \phi_1^*) \in \{(x,y) \in \mathbb{R}^2_+ : x < y\} \quad \Longleftrightarrow \quad 1 < \mu(\lambda + c).$$

This condition is satisfied for the numbers above. As a result, we have $x_1 = (\lambda/c)\cdot(\sqrt{2}/2)$ and $\gamma(x) = a_0(x) = x - (\lambda/c)\sqrt{2}$ for every $x \in [\phi_0^*, x_1]$. The boundary function $\gamma(\cdot)$ is strictly above the function $a_0(\cdot)$ everywhere else.

13. Appendix: proofs of selected results in Part 2

Proof of Proposition 9.3. Let us prove (9.5) for $n = 1$. Take $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in S^{-1}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$. By (9.4), the curve $u \mapsto (x(u, \phi_0), y(u, \phi_1))$, $u \in \mathbb{R}_+$ does not leave $S^{-1}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$. Therefore,

$$S\big(x(u,\phi_0), y(u,\phi_1)\big) \in \mathbf{\Gamma} \quad \text{and} \quad (V \circ S)\big(x(u,\phi_0), y(u,\phi_1)\big) = 0, \quad u \in \mathbb{R}_+.$$

Then Lemma 5.6, (5.4), (5.6) and Proposition 5.5 imply that

$$\begin{aligned} V(\phi_0,\phi_1) = J_0V(\phi_0,\phi_1) &= \inf_{t\in[0,\infty]} \int_0^t e^{-(\lambda+\mu)u}[g + \mu \cdot V \circ S]\big(x(u,\phi_0), y(u,\phi_1)\big)du \\ &= \inf_{t\in[0,\infty]} \int_0^t e^{-(\lambda+\mu)u} g\big(x(u,\phi_0), y(u,\phi_1)\big)du = J_0V_0(\phi_0,\phi_1) = V_1(\phi_0,\phi_1). \end{aligned}$$

Since V is the limit of the decreasing sequence $\{V_n\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$, the equalities $V = V_1 = V_2 = \cdots$ on $S^{-1}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$ follow.

On $S^{-1}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) \cap \mathbf{C}$, we have $0 > V = V_1 = V_2 = \cdots$. Therefore, $S^{-1}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) \cap \mathbf{C} \subseteq \mathbf{C}_k$ for every $k \geq 1$. Taking intersection of both sides with $S^{-1}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$ gives $S^{-1}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) \cap \mathbf{C} \subseteq S^{-1}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) \cap \mathbf{C}_k$ for every $k \geq 1$. To prove the opposite inclusion, note that $V = V_k < 0$ on $S^{-1}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) \cap \mathbf{C}_k$ for every $k \geq 1$. Therefore, $S^{-1}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) \cap \mathbf{C}_k \subseteq \mathbf{C}$, $k \geq 1$. Intersecting both sides with the set $S^{-1}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$ gives $S^{-1}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) \cap \mathbf{C}_k \subseteq S^{-1}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) \cap \mathbf{C}$, $k \geq 1$.

The proof of $S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) \cap \mathbf{\Gamma} = S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) \cap \mathbf{\Gamma}_n = S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma}) \cap \mathbf{\Gamma}_{n+1} = \cdots$ reads the same as in the previous paragraph after every "$\mathbf{C}$" above is replaced with "$\mathbf{\Gamma}$", and every strict inequality is replaced with an equality. This completes the proof of (9.5) for $n = 1$.

Suppose that (9.5) holds for some $n \in \mathbb{N}$, and let us prove it for $n + 1$. Take $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in S^{-(n+1)}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$. Since the curve $u \mapsto (x(u, \phi_0), y(u, \phi_1))$, $u \in \mathbb{R}_+$ does not leave the region $S^{-(n+1)}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$ by (9.4), we have $S\big(x(u,\phi_0), y(u,\phi_1)\big) \in S^{-n}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$, $u \in \mathbb{R}_+$, and

$$(V \circ S)\big(x(u,\phi_0), y(u,\phi_1)\big) = (V_n \circ S)\big(x(u,\phi_0), y(u,\phi_1)\big), \quad u \in \mathbb{R}_+$$

by induction hypothesis. Then Lemma 5.6, (5.4), (5.6) and Proposition 5.5 imply that

$$\begin{aligned} V(\phi_0,\phi_1) = J_0V(\phi_0,\phi_1) &= \inf_{t\in[0,\infty]} \int_0^t e^{-(\lambda+\mu)u}[g + \mu \cdot V \circ S]\big(x(u,\phi_0), y(u,\phi_1)\big)du \\ = \inf_{t\in[0,\infty]} \int_0^t e^{-(\lambda+\mu)u}&[g + \mu \cdot V_n \circ S]\big(x(u,\phi_0), y(u,\phi_1)\big)du = J_0V_n(\phi_0,\phi_1) = V_{n+1}(\phi_0,\phi_1). \end{aligned}$$

Since V is the limit of the decreasing sequence $\{V_n\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$, we have $V = V_{n+1} = V_{n+2} = \cdots$ on $S^{-(n+1)}(\mathbf{\Gamma})$. From these equalities follows the proof of the equalities of the regions in (9.5) for $n + 1$, by the similar arguments presented for $n = 1$ above. $\square$

Proof of Lemma 10.2. The obvious choices are the function $a_n : \mathbb{R}_+ \mapsto \mathbb{R}_+$ and the number α_n in (10.3) and (10.4), respectively. By the discussion above,

$$\begin{aligned}\big\{(x,y)\in\mathbb{R}^2_+;\ [g+\mu\cdot v_n\circ S](x,y)<0\big\} &= A_n = \mathbb{R}^2_+\backslash\mathrm{epi}(a_n)\\ &= \big\{(x,y)\in\mathbb{R}^2_+;\ y<a_n(x)\big\} = \{(x,y)\in[0,\alpha_n)\times\mathbb{R}_+;\ y<a_n(x)\}\,,\end{aligned}$$

and (10.6) follows. The proof will be complete if we show the equality in (10.5).

Since $[g+\mu\cdot v_n\circ S](x,y)$, $x\in\mathbb{R}_+$ is continuous, we have $[g+\mu\cdot v_n\circ S](x,a_n(x))\geq 0$ for every $x\in\mathbb{R}_+$, and the equality holds for every $x\in[0,\alpha_n)$ because $a_n(x)>0$, $x\in[0,\alpha_n)$. Because $a_n(\cdot)$ is also continuous, the equality also holds for $(x,y)=(\alpha_n,a(\alpha_n))$, and

$$[g+\mu\cdot v_n\circ S](x,a_n(x))=0,\qquad x\in[0,\alpha_n]. \tag{13.1}$$

The identity (10.5) will follow immediately if we show for the same A_n in (10.1) that

$$[g+\mu\cdot v_n\circ S](x,y)>0,\qquad (x,y)\in\big(\mathbb{R}^2_+\backslash A_n\big)\backslash\{(x,a_n(x)) : x\in[0,\alpha_n]\}. \tag{13.2}$$

The nonpositive function $v_n(\cdot,\cdot)$ is concave and equal to zero outside the bounded region $\mathbf{C}_n$. Therefore, the functions $y\mapsto v_n(x,y)$, $x\in\mathbb{R}_+$ and $x\mapsto v_n(x,y)$, $y\in\mathbb{R}_+$ are nonpositive, concave and equal zero for every large real y and x, respectively. This implies that the functions $y\mapsto v_n(x,y)$, $x\in\mathbb{R}_+$ and $x\mapsto v_n(x,y)$, $y\in\mathbb{R}_+$ are nondecreasing. Therefore, the functions $y\mapsto[g+\mu\cdot v_n\circ S](x,y)$, $x\in\mathbb{R}_+$ and $x\mapsto[g+\mu\cdot v_n\circ S](x,y)$, $y\in\mathbb{R}_+$ are strictly increasing since both $S(x,y)$ and $g(x,y)$ are strictly increasing in both x and y. Now, (13.2) follows from (13.1). □

Proof of Lemma 10.7. Fix any $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$. Then $v_{n+1}(\phi_0,\phi_1)=0$, and substituting $(\phi_0^{-t},\phi_1^{-t})\triangleq(x(-t,\phi_0),y(-t,\phi_1))$ into (10.15) for any $t\in[0,\widehat{r}(\phi_0,\phi_1)]$ gives

$$J_t v_n(x(-t,\phi_0),y(-t,\phi_1)) = -e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t}Jv_n(-t,\phi_0,\phi_1),\qquad t\in[0,\widehat{r}(\phi_0,\phi_1)], \tag{13.3}$$

thanks to the semigroup property of $x(\cdot,\cdot)$ and $y(\cdot,\cdot)$.

By the definition of the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$ in (10.10), the point (ϕ_0,ϕ_1) is reachable from the inside of the continuation region $\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$. Namely, there exists some $\delta>0$ such that $(x(-t,\phi_0),y(-t,\phi_1))\in\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$ and $r_n(x(-t,\phi_0),y(-t,\phi_1))=t$ for every $t\in(0,\delta]$. Then (10.16) implies

$$0>v_{n+1}(x(-t,\phi_0),y(-t,\phi_1)) = J_t v_n(x(-t,\phi_0),y(-t,\phi_1)) = -e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t}Jv_n(-t,\phi_0,\phi_1)$$

for every $t \in (0, \delta]$. Since $\widehat{r}_n(\phi_0, \phi_1)$ is the first time when the last function on the right may change its sign, we obtain

$$-Jv_n(-t, \phi_0, \phi_1) < 0, \qquad t \in (0, \widehat{r}_n(\phi_0, \phi_1) \wedge \widehat{r}(\phi_0, \phi_1)).$$

Using (10.16) once again, we conclude

$$\begin{aligned} v_{n+1}(x(-t, \phi_0), y(-t, \phi_1)) &\le J_t v_n(x(-t, \phi_0), y(-t, \phi_1)) \\ &= -e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t} Jv_n(-t, \phi_0, \phi_1) < 0, \qquad t \in (0, \widehat{r}_n(\phi_0, \phi_1) \wedge \widehat{r}(\phi_0, \phi_1)). \end{aligned}$$

Thus

$$\begin{aligned} \{(x(-t, \phi_0), y(-t, \phi_1));\ t \in (0, \widehat{r}_n(\phi_0, \phi_1) \wedge \widehat{r}(\phi_0, \phi_1))\} &\subseteq \mathbf{C}_{n+1}, \\ r_n(x(-t, \phi_0), y(-t, \phi_1)) = t, \qquad t &\in (0, \widehat{r}_n(\phi_0, \phi_1) \wedge \widehat{r}(\phi_0, \phi_1)), \\ v_{n+1}(x(-t, \phi_0), y(-t, \phi_1)) = -e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t} Jv_n(-t, \phi_0, \phi_1), \quad t &\in (0, \widehat{r}_n(\phi_0, \phi_1) \wedge \widehat{r}(\phi_0, \phi_1)). \end{aligned}$$

The third equation follows from the second and (13.3), and the second equation follows from the first and the fact $(x(t, x(-t, \phi_0)), y(t, y(-t, \phi_1))) = (\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbf{\Gamma}$. Taking the limit in the third equation as t increases to $\widehat{r}_n(\phi_0, \phi_1)$ gives

$$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} v_{n+1}(x(-t, \phi_0), y(-t, \phi_1))\Big|_{t=\widehat{r}_n(\phi_0,\phi_1)} = 0, \quad \text{and} \\ (x(-\widehat{r}_n(\phi_0, \phi_1), \phi_0), y(-\widehat{r}_n(\phi_0, \phi_1), \phi_1)) \in \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1} \end{array} \right\} \quad \text{if} \quad \widehat{r}_n(\phi_0, \phi_1) \le \widehat{r}(\phi_0, \phi_1).$$

Finally, every $(\widetilde{\phi}_0, \widetilde{\phi}_1) \in \mathbf{C}_{n+1} \cup \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^x_{n+1}$ is reachable from $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \equiv r_n(\widetilde{\phi}_0, \widetilde{\phi}_1) \in \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_{n+1}$ on the entrance boundary by the curve $\{(x(t, \widetilde{\phi}_0), y(t, \widetilde{\phi}_1));\ t \in [0, r_n(\widetilde{\phi}_0, \widetilde{\phi}_1)]\}$ which is contained (possibly, except the end-points) in the continuation region $\mathbf{C}_{n+1}$. □

Proof of Corollary 12.6. By Lemma 12.4, the function $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \mapsto r_0(\phi_0, \phi_1)$ is continuous on the continuation region $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbf{C}_1$. Therefore, the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_1$ is the image of the *continuous* mapping, see the definition in (10.10),

$$(\phi_0, \phi_1) \mapsto (x(r_0(\phi_0, \phi_1), \phi_1), \gamma_1(y(r_0(\phi_0, \phi_1), \phi_1))), \qquad (\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbf{C}_1$$

from the *connected* region $\mathbf{C}_1$ into $\mathbb{R}^2_+$. Thus the set $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_1$ is a connected subset of $\mathbb{R}^2_+$.

Since the parametric curves $t \mapsto (x(t, \phi_0), y(t, 0))$, $\phi_0 \in \mathbb{R}_+$ starting on the x-axis are increasing, the points on the boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1$ where these curves meet the boundary belong to the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_1$; see also Figure 2. Hence $\{(x, \gamma_1(x)) : x \in [\delta, \xi_1)\} \subseteq \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_1$ for some $0 \le \delta < \xi_1$. Then the connectedness of $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_1$ gives (12.14) with $\xi^e_1 \triangleq \inf\{x \in \mathbb{R}_+ : (x, \gamma_1(x)) \in \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}^e_1\}$.

Indeed the point $(\xi_1^e, \gamma_1(\xi_1^e))$ does not belong to the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e$. Suppose it does. Then $\{(x(-t,\xi_1^e), y(-t,\gamma_1(\xi_1^e))); t\in(0,\delta]\}\subset \mathbf{C}_1$ for some $\delta>0$. Let $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathbf{C}_1$ be the point in the middle of the vertical line-segment connecting the points $(x(-\delta,\xi_1^e), y(-\delta,\gamma_1(\xi_1^e)))$ and $(x(-\delta,\xi_1^e), \gamma_1(x(-\delta,\xi_1^e)))$. Then we have $x(\delta,\phi_0) = x(\delta, x(-\delta,\xi_1^e)) = \xi_1^e$ and $y(\delta,\phi_1) > y(\delta, y(-\delta,\gamma_1(\xi_1^e))) = \gamma_1(\xi_1^e) = \gamma_1(x(\delta,\phi_0))$ since the mapping $\phi\mapsto y(t,\phi)$ is increasing for every $t\in\mathbb{R}$. Therefore, $(x(\delta,\phi_0), y(\delta,\phi_1))\in\mathbf{\Gamma}_1$ and $0<r_0(\phi_0,\phi_1)<\delta$. Thus we have $(x(r_0(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_0), y(r_0(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_1))\in\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e$, but $x(r_0(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_0) < x(\delta,\phi_0) = \xi_1^e$ (the mapping $\phi\mapsto x(t,\phi)$ is increasing for every $t\in\mathbb{R}$). This contradicts with the minimality of ξ_1^e. ☐

Proof of Corollary 12.12. Suppose $\xi_1^e>0$ and fix any $\phi_0\in[0,\xi_1^e)$. Let $\overline{\phi}_0 \triangleq (1/2)(\phi_0+\xi_1^e)$. Then $(\overline{\phi}_0, \gamma_1(\overline{\phi}_0))\in\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$, and $\gamma_1(\phi_0)>\gamma_1(\overline{\phi}_0)>\gamma_1(\xi_1^e)$ since $\gamma_1(\cdot)$ is strictly decreasing on its support. Then the set $B\triangleq[0,\overline{\phi}_0)\times(\gamma_1(\overline{\phi}_0),\infty)$ is an open neighborhood of the point $(\overline{\phi}_0,\gamma_1(\overline{\phi}_0))$ such that for every $(\widetilde{\phi}_0,\widetilde{\phi}_1)\in B\cap\mathbf{C}_1$, we have

$$0<\underline{r}\le r_0(\widetilde{\phi}_0,\widetilde{\phi}_1)\le\overline{r}<\infty,$$

where $\underline{r}\triangleq\inf\{t\ge0: y(t,\gamma_1(\overline{\phi}_0))\le\gamma_1(\xi_1^e)\}$ and $\overline{r}\triangleq\inf\{t\ge0: x(t,0)\ge\xi_1\}$. This completes the proof of the first part.

Now let $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e$ be a point on the entrance boundary. Take any convergent sequence $\{(\phi_0^{(n)},\phi_1^{(n)})\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ in the continuation region $\mathbf{C}_1$ whose limit is the boundary point (ϕ_0,ϕ_1). Since $r_0(\cdot,\cdot)\le\overline{r}$ (see above) on $\mathbf{C}_1$, the sequence $\{r_0(\phi_0^{(n)},\phi_1^{(n)})\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ is bounded and has a convergent subsequence. We shall conclude the proof of the second part by showing that every convergent subsequence of the sequence $\{r_0(\phi_0^{(n)},\phi_1^{(n)})\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ has the same limit 0.

Without changing the notation, suppose that $\{r_0(\phi_0^{(n)},\phi_1^{(n)})\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ converges to some finite number $r_0\ge0$. Since the value function $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\mapsto v_1(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ from $\mathbb{R}_+^2$ to $\mathbb{R}$ and the function $(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)\mapsto Jv_0(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)$ from $\mathbb{R}_+^3$ to $\mathbb{R}$ are continuous, we have

$$\begin{aligned}0=v_1(\phi_0,\phi_1)=\lim_{n\to\infty}v_1(\phi_0^{(n)},\phi_1^{(n)})&=\lim_{n\to\infty}Jv_0\left(r_0(\phi_0^{(n)},\phi_1^{(n)}),\phi_0^{(n)},\phi_1^{(n)}\right)\\&=Jv_0(r_0,\phi_0,\phi_1)=\int_0^{r_0}e^{-(\lambda+\mu)t}G_0(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)dt.\end{aligned}$$

If we show that $G_0(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)>0$ for every $t>0$, then $r_0=0$ follows.

However, $t=0$ is a point of increase for the function $t\mapsto G_0(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)$. Since $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e=\{(x,a_0(x)): x\in(\xi_1^e,\xi_1)\}$ by Corollary 12.7, and the boundary function $a_0(\cdot)$ of the region $A_0=\{(x,y)\in\mathbb{R}_+^2: [g+\mu\cdot v_0\circ S](x,y)<0\}$ is strictly decreasing, there exists some

$\delta > 0$ such that $(x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1)) \in A_0 \subseteq \mathbf{C}_1$ for every $t \in [-\delta, 0)$. Therefore,

$$G(t,\phi_0,\phi_1) = [g + \mu \cdot v_0 \circ S](x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\phi_1)) < 0 = G_0(0,\phi_0,\phi_1), \qquad t \in [-\delta, 0).$$

Then Lemma 12.3 implies that $G_0(t,\phi_0,\phi_1) > 0$ for every $t > 0$ and completes the proof of $r_0 = 0$. □

Proof of Lemma 12.13. If $\xi_1^e = 0$, then $\mathrm{cl}(\partial \mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e) = \{(x, \gamma_1(x)) : x \in [0, \xi_1]\} = \partial \mathbf{\Gamma}_1$ by Corollary 12.6. In the remainder, suppose that $\xi_1^e > 0$ and fix any $\phi_0 \in [0, \xi_1^e)$. The boundary point $(\phi_0, \gamma_1(\phi_0))$ is not included in the entrance boundary $\partial \mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e$. We shall prove that it is an exit boundary point; namely, there exists some $\delta > 0$ such that (see (10.10))

$$(x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\gamma_1(\phi_0))) \in \mathbf{C}_1, \qquad \forall\, t \in (0, \delta]. \tag{13.4}$$

Since the boundary $\gamma_1(\cdot)$ is strictly decreasing on its support $[0, \xi_1]$, we have

$$0 \le \phi_0 < \xi_1^e \quad \Longrightarrow \quad \gamma_1(\phi_0) > \gamma_1(\xi_1^e).$$

Then there is always a sequence of points $\{(\phi_0^{(n)}, \phi_1^{(n)})\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}} \subseteq \mathbf{C}_1$ such that

$$\phi_0^{(n)} = \phi_0 \quad \text{and} \quad \phi_1^{(n)} > \gamma_1(\xi_1^e) \quad \text{for every } n \in \mathbb{N}, \quad \text{and} \quad \lim_{n\to\infty} \phi_1^{(n)} =\uparrow \gamma_1(\phi_0).$$

Namely, the sequence $\{(\phi_0^{(n)}, \phi_1^{(n)})\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ "increases" to the point $(\phi_0, \gamma_1(\phi_0))$ along the vertical line passing through the point $(\phi_0, \gamma_1(\phi_0))$. For every $n \in \mathbb{N}$, we have

$$v_1(\phi_0^{(n)}, \phi_1^{(n)}) = Jv_0\left(r_0(\phi_0^{(n)}, \phi_1^{(n)}), \phi_0^{(n)}, \phi_1^{(n)}\right), \quad \text{and}$$
$$\left(x\left(r_0(\phi_0^{(n)}, \phi_1^{(n)}), \phi_0^{(n)}\right), y\left(r_0(\phi_0^{(n)}, \phi_1^{(n)}), \phi_1^{(n)}\right)\right) \in \partial \mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e.$$

By Corollary 12.12, the sequence $\{r_0(\phi_0^{(n)}, \phi_1^{(n)})\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ is bounded. Therefore, it has a convergent subsequence; we shall denote it by the same notation and its limit by r_0. The functions $Jv_0(\cdot,\cdot,\cdot)$, $x(\cdot,\cdot)$, $y(\cdot,\cdot)$ and $v_1(\cdot,\cdot)$ are continuous, and $v_1(\phi_0, \gamma_1(\phi_0)) = 0$. Therefore, taking limits of the displayed equations above gives

$$0 = Jv_0(r_0, \phi_0, \gamma_1(\phi_0)) \qquad \text{and} \qquad (x(r_0,\phi_0), y(r_0, \gamma_1(\phi_0))) \in \mathrm{cl}(\partial \mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e). \tag{13.5}$$

The second expression implies that $x(r_0, \phi_0) \ge \xi_1^e$. We shall prove that the inequality is strict, and therefore,

$$(x(r_0,\phi_0), y(r_0, \gamma_1(\phi_0))) \in \partial \mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e. \tag{13.6}$$

Let us assume that $x(r_0, \phi_0) = \xi_1^e$. Then the second expression in (13.5) implies that $(x(r_0,\phi_0), y(r_0,\gamma_1(\phi_0))) = (\xi_1^e, \gamma_1(\xi_1^e))$. Thus $(\phi_0, \gamma_1(\phi_0))$ is on the curve $\mathcal{C}_1$ given by (12.16).

Then Corollary 12.9 implies that $G(t, \phi_0, \gamma_1(\phi_0)) > 0$ for every $t \neq r_0$. Since $r_0 > 0$, this implies that

$$Jv_0(r_0, \phi_0, \gamma_1(\phi_0)) = \int_0^{r_0} e^{-(\lambda+\mu)s} G_0(s, \phi_0, \gamma_1(\phi_0)) ds$$

is strictly positive. But this contradicts the first equality in (13.5). Therefore, we must have $x(r_0, \phi_0) > \xi_1^e$, and (13.6) is correct.

Now we are ready to prove (13.4). Since $\phi_0 < \xi_1^e$, we have $[g + \mu \cdot v_0 \circ S](\phi_0, \gamma_1(\phi_0)) > 0$ by Corollary 12.11. Because the mapping $[g + \mu \cdot v_0 \circ S](\cdot, \cdot)$ is continuous, there exists some $r_0 > \delta > 0$ such that

$$G_0(t, \phi_0, \gamma_1(\phi_0)) = [g + \mu \cdot v_0 \circ S](x(t, \phi_0), y(t, \gamma_1(\phi_0))) > 0, \qquad t \in [0, \delta].$$

Then for every $t \in (0, \delta]$

$$\begin{aligned} v_0(x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\gamma_1(\phi_0))) &\leq Jv_0(r_0 - t, x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\gamma_1(\phi_0))) \\ &= \int_0^{r_0 - t} e^{-(\lambda+\mu)u} [g + \mu \cdot v_0 \circ S]\Big(x(u, x(t,\phi_0)), y(u, y(t, \gamma_1(\phi_0)))\Big) du \\ &= e^{(\lambda+\mu)t} \int_t^{r_0} e^{-(\lambda+\mu)u} [g + \mu \cdot v_0 \circ S]\Big(x(t,\phi_0), y(t,\gamma_1(\phi_0))\Big) du \\ &= e^{(\lambda+\mu)t} \left[\underbrace{Jv_0(r_0, \phi_0, \gamma_1(\phi_0))}_{=0} - \int_0^t e^{-(\lambda+\mu)u} G_0(u, \phi_0, \gamma_1(\phi_0)) du \right] < 0. \end{aligned}$$

Therefore, (13.4) holds, and $(\phi_0, \gamma_1(\phi_0)) \in \partial \mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$. □

Proof of Lemma 12.14. There is nothing to prove if $\xi_1^e = 0$. Therefore, suppose $\xi_1^e > 0$. Let B_1 be the union of the continuation region $\mathbf{C}_1$ and the open subset of $[0, \xi_1^e) \times \mathbb{R}_+$ strictly below the curve $\mathcal{C}_1$ in Corollary 12.9, see Figure 7(b). Then B_1 is open and $\mathbf{C}_1 \cup \partial \mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x \subset B_1$, see Remark 12.10. Define

$$\left\{ \begin{aligned} \widetilde{r}_0(\phi_0, \phi_1) &\triangleq \inf\{t > 0 : (x(t, \phi_0), y(t, \phi_1)) \in \partial \mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e\} \\ \widetilde{v}_1(\phi_0, \phi_1) &\triangleq Jv_0(\widetilde{r}_0(\phi_0, \phi_1), \phi_0, \phi_1) \end{aligned} \right\}, \qquad \text{for every } (\phi_0, \phi_1) \in B_1.$$

Then

$$r_0(\phi_0, \phi_1) = \widetilde{r}_0(\phi_0, \phi_1) \quad \text{and} \quad v_1(\phi_0, \phi_1) = \widetilde{v}_1(\phi_0, \phi_1), \qquad (\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \mathbf{C}_1 \cup \partial \mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x, \tag{13.7}$$

Let us show that $\widetilde{r}_0(\cdot,\cdot)$, and therefore, $\widetilde{v}_1(\cdot,\cdot)$ are continuously differentiable on B_1. The infimum $\widetilde{r}_0(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ is finite and strictly positive for every $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in B_1$. By (10.12),

$$\begin{aligned}(13.8)\quad & G_0(\widetilde{r}_0(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_0,\phi_1)= \\ &\qquad [g+\mu\cdot v_0\circ S](x(\widetilde{r}_0(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_0),y(\widetilde{r}_0(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_1))=0, \qquad (\phi_0,\phi_1)\in B_1.\end{aligned}$$

The mapping $(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)\mapsto G_0(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)$ from $\mathbb{R}^3_+$ to $\mathbb{R}$ is continuously differentiable. If

$$D_t G_0(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)\Big|_{t=\widetilde{r}_0(\phi_0,\phi_1)}\neq 0, \qquad (\phi_0,\phi_1)\in B_1, \tag{13.9}$$

then Theorem 12.2 implies that, in an open neighborhood in B_1 of every (ϕ_0,ϕ_1), the equation $G_0(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)=0$ determines $t=t(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ implicitly as a function of (ϕ_0,ϕ_1), and this function is continuously differentiable. In every neighborhood, these solutions must then coincide with $\widetilde{r}_0(\phi_0,\phi_1)$. Therefore, $\widetilde{r}_0(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ is continuously differentiable on B_1. Then the function $\widetilde{v}_1(\phi_0,\phi_1)$ is continuously differentiable on B_1 since $Jv_0(\cdot,\cdot,\cdot)$ is continuously differentiable on $\mathbb{R}^3_+$.

Now fix any $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in B_1$ and assume $D_tG_0(\widetilde{r}_0(\phi_0,\phi_1),\phi_0,\phi_1)=0$. Then the function $t\mapsto G_0(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)$ has a local minimum at $t=\widetilde{r}_0(\phi_0,\phi_1)$. Lemma 12.3 and (13.8) imply that $G_0(t,\phi_0,\phi_1)>0$ for every $t\neq\widetilde{r}_0(\phi_0,\phi_1)$. Therefore, the parametric curve

$$\{(x(t,\phi_0),y(t,\phi_1)):t\in\mathbb{R}\}\cap\mathbb{R}^2_+\subseteq\mathbb{R}^2_+\backslash A_0$$

does not intersect A_0, but touches the boundary ∂A_0. Then this curve has to be the same as $\mathcal{C}_1$ in Corollary (12.16), and $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in\mathcal{C}_1$. But this contradicts with $(\phi_0,\phi_1)\in B_1$, since Remark 12.10 and the description of B_1 show that $\mathcal{C}_1\cap B_1=\varnothing$. Therefore, (13.9) holds.

Now let us show that $\gamma_1(\cdot)$ is continuously differentiable on $[0,\xi_1^e)$. Fix any $\phi_0\in[0,\xi_1^e)$. Then $(\phi_0,\gamma_1(\phi_0))\in\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x\subset B_1$, and $\widetilde{v}_1(\phi_0,\gamma_1(\phi_0))=0$ by (13.7). The function $\widetilde{v}_1(\cdot,\cdot)$ is continuously differentiable on B_1. Therefore, the result will again follow from the implicit function theorem (Theorem 12.2) if we show that $D_{\phi_1}\widetilde{v}_1(\phi_0,\gamma_1(\phi_0))\neq 0$. However,

$$\begin{aligned}&D_{\phi_1}\widetilde{v}_1(\phi_0,\gamma_1(\phi_0))=D^-_{\phi_1}\widetilde{v}_1(\phi_0,\gamma_1(\phi_0))=D^-_{\phi_1}v_1(\phi_0,\gamma_1(\phi_0))\\ &\qquad=\lim_{\phi_1\uparrow\gamma_1(\phi_0)}D^-_{\phi_1}v_1(\phi_0,\phi_1)=\lim_{\phi_1\uparrow\gamma_1(\phi_0)}D_{\phi_1}v_1(\phi_0,\phi_1)=\lim_{\phi_1\uparrow\gamma_1(\phi_0)}\frac{1-e^{-(\mu+1)r_0(\phi_0,\phi_1)}}{\mu+1}>0.\end{aligned}$$

The second equality follows from (13.7), and the third from the concavity of $v_1(\cdot,\cdot)$. The fourth and the fifth follow from Corollary 12.5. Finally, the limit at the end is strictly positive since $r_0(\cdot,\cdot)$ is bounded away from zero in the intersection of $\mathbf{C}_1$ with some neighborhood of $(\phi_0,\gamma_1(\phi_0))$ by Corollary 12.12. □

Proof of Lemma 12.15. The result follows from Corollary 12.7 if $\xi_1^e = 0$. Therefore, suppose $\xi_1^e > 0$. Then the boundary function $\gamma_1(\cdot)$ is continuously differentiable on $[0, \xi_1^e) \cup (\xi_1^e, \xi_1)$ by Corollary 12.7 and Lemma 12.14. We need to show that $x \mapsto \gamma_1(x)$ is continuously differentiable at $x = \xi_1^e$.

Recall that the function $\gamma_1(\cdot)$ is convex. Therefore, the left derivative $D^-\gamma_1(\cdot)$ and the right derivative $D^+\gamma_1(\cdot)$ of the function $\gamma_1(\cdot)$ exist and are left- and right- continuous, respectively, at $x = \xi_1^e$. Thus

$$\lim_{x \uparrow \xi_1^e} D\gamma_1(x) = \lim_{x \uparrow \xi_1^e} D^-\gamma_1(x) = D^-\gamma_1(\xi_1^e) \le D^+\gamma_1(\xi_1^e) = \lim_{x \downarrow \xi_1^e} D^+\gamma_1(x) = \lim_{x \downarrow \xi_1^e} D\gamma_1(x). \tag{13.10}$$

The continuity of the derivative $D\gamma_1(\cdot)$ of the function $\gamma_1(\cdot)$ at $x = \xi_1^e$ will follow immediately from the existence of the derivative of $\gamma_1(\cdot)$ at $x = \xi_1^e$.

Now recall from Corollary 12.9 and Remark 12.10 that the point $(\xi_1^e, \gamma_1(\xi_1^e))$ is on the parametric curve $\mathcal{C}_1$, which lays above $\{(x, \gamma_1(x)) : x \in \mathbb{R}_+\}$ and touches it at the point $(\xi_1^e, \gamma_1(\xi_1^e))$. Therefore, for every $t > 0$ and $s > 0$

$$\begin{aligned}\frac{y(0, \gamma_1(\xi_1^e)) - y(-t, \gamma_1(\xi_1^e))}{x(0, \xi_1^e) - x(-t, \xi_1^e)} &\le \frac{\gamma_1(x(0, \xi_1^e)) - \gamma_1(x(-t, \xi_1^e))}{x(0, \xi_1^e) - x(-t, \xi_1^e)} \\ &\le \frac{\gamma_1(x(s, \xi_1^e)) - \gamma_1(x(0, \xi_1^e))}{x(s, \xi_1^e) - x(0, \xi_1^e)} \le \frac{y(s, \gamma_1(\xi_1^e)) - y(0, \gamma_1(\xi_1^e))}{x(s, \xi_1^e) - x(0, \xi_1^e)}.\end{aligned}$$

When we take the limit as $t \downarrow 0$ and $s \downarrow 0$, we obtain

$$\frac{D_t y(0, \gamma_1(\xi_1^e))}{D_t x(0, \xi_1^e)} \le D^-\gamma_1(\xi_1^e) \le D^+\gamma_1(\xi_1^e) \le \frac{D_t y(0, \gamma_1(\xi_1^e))}{D_t x(0, \xi_1^e)}.$$

Note that the terms on far left and far right are the same. Therefore, $D^-\gamma_1(\xi_1^e) = D^+\gamma_1(\xi_1^e)$ and the derivative of the boundary function $\gamma_1(\cdot)$ at $x = \xi_1^e$ exists. □

Proof of Lemma 12.16. Since $v_1(\cdot, \cdot)$ is concave, the left partial derivatives $D^-_{\phi_0} v_1(\cdot, \cdot)$, $D^-_{\phi_1} v_1(\cdot, \cdot)$ and the right partial derivatives $D^+_{\phi_0} v_1(\cdot, \cdot)$, $D^+_{\phi_1} v_1(\cdot, \cdot)$ exist and are left- and right-continuous on the boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}$, respectively. Because $v_1(\cdot, \cdot)$ vanishes on $\mathbf{\Gamma}_1$, and the function $\gamma_1(\cdot)$ is strictly decreasing, we have

$$D^-_{\phi_0} v_1(\phi_0, \phi_1) \ge D^+_{\phi_0} v_1(\phi_0, \phi_1) = 0, \qquad (\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1 \backslash \{(0, \gamma_1(0))\}. \tag{13.11}$$

$$D^-_{\phi_1} v_1(\phi_0, \phi_1) \ge D^+_{\phi_1} v_1(\phi_0, \phi_1) = 0, \qquad (\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1 \backslash \{(\xi_1, 0)\}. \tag{13.12}$$

For every boundary point $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1 \backslash \{(0, \gamma_1(0))\}$ and any sequence $\{(\phi_0^{(n)}, \phi_1^{(n)})\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}} \subset \mathbf{C}_1$ such that $\lim_{n\to\infty} \phi_0^{(n)} =\uparrow \phi_0$ and $\phi_1^{(n)} = \phi_1$ for every $n \in \mathbb{N}$, we have

$$\text{(13.13)} \quad D^-_{\phi_0} v_1(\phi_0, \phi_1) = \lim_{n\to\infty} D^-_{\phi_0} v_1(\phi_0^{(n)}, \phi_1^{(n)}) = \lim_{n\to\infty} D_{\phi_0} v_1(\phi_0^{(n)}, \phi_1^{(n)}) = \lim_{n\to\infty} \frac{1 - \exp\left\{-(\mu-1) r_0(\phi_0^{(n)}, \phi_1^{(n)})\right\}}{\mu - 1}.$$

The second and the third equalities follow from Corollary 12.5. The function $r_0(\cdot, \cdot)$ is continuous on the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e$ and is bounded away from zero in some neighborhood of every point on the exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$, see Corollary 12.12. Therefore, the limit on the right in (13.13) equals zero for every point (ϕ_0, ϕ_1) on the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e$ and is strictly positive for every point (ϕ_0, ϕ_1) on the exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$.

Thus, for every $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e$, the equality in (13.11), and as a result of a similar argument, the equality in (13.12) are attained. Therefore, the partial derivatives $D_{\phi_0} v_1(\cdot, \cdot)$ and $D_{\phi_1} v_1(\cdot, \cdot)$ exist at every $(\phi_0, \phi_1) \in \partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e$ and are continuous since $D_{\phi_0} v_1(\cdot, \cdot) = D^{\pm}_{\phi_0} v_1(\cdot, \cdot)$ is both left- and right-continuous near the entrance boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^e$.

However, if (ϕ_0, ϕ_1) is a point on the exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$, then the inequalities in (13.12) and (13.13) are strict. Namely, the $v_1(\cdot, \cdot)$ is not differentiable on the exit boundary $\partial\mathbf{\Gamma}_1^x$. □

References

Bayraktar, E. and Dayanik, S. (2003). Poisson disorder problem with exponential penalty for delay. Preprint. Princeton University. (http://www.princeton.edu/~sdayanik/papers/expo.pdf).

Bayraktar, E., Dayanik, S. and Karatzas, I. (2004a). Adaptive Poisson disorder problem. Preprint. Princeton University.

Bayraktar, E., Dayanik, S. and Karatzas, I. (2004b). The standard Poisson disorder problem revisited. Preprint. Princeton University. (http://www.princeton.edu/~sdayanik/papers/standard.pdf).

Brémaud, P. (1981). *Point Processes and Queues*, Springer-Verlag, New York. Martingale dynamics, Springer Series in Statistics.

Clarke, F. H., Ledyaev, Y. S., Stern, R. J. and Wolenski, P. R. (1998). *Nonsmooth Analysis and Control Theory*, Vol. 178 of *Graduate Texts in Mathematics*, Springer-Verlag, New York.

Davis, M. H. A. (1976). A note on the Poisson disorder problem, *Banach Center Publ.* **1**: 65–72.

Davis, M. H. A. (1993). *Markov Models and Optimization*, Vol. 49 of *Monographs on Statistics and Applied Probability*, Chapman & Hall, London.

Galchuk, L. I. and Rozovskii, B. L. (1971). The disorder problem for a Poisson process, *Theory of Prob. and Appl.* **16**: 729–734.

Gugerli, U. S. (1986). Optimal stopping of a piecewise-deterministic Markov process, *Stochastics* **19**(4): 221–236.

Krantz, S. G. and Parks, H. R. (2002). *The Implicit Function Theorem*, Birkhäuser Boston Inc., Boston, MA. History, Theory, and Applications.

Liptser, R. S. and Shiryaev, A. N. (2001). *Statistics of Random Processes. I*, Vol. 5 of *Applications of Mathematics (New York)*, expanded edn, Springer-Verlag, Berlin. General theory, Translated from the 1974 Russian original by A. B. Aries, Stochastic Modelling and Applied Probability.

Øksendal, B. (1998). *Stochastic Differential Equations*, Springer-Verlag, Berlin.

Peskir, G. and Shiryaev, A. N. (2002). Solving the Poisson disorder problem, *Advances in finance and stochastics*, Springer, Berlin, pp. 295–312.

Protter, M. H. and Morrey, Jr., C. B. (1991). *A First Course in Real Analysis*, Undergraduate Texts in Mathematics, second edn, Springer-Verlag, New York.

Rockafellar, R. T. (1997). *Convex Analysis*, Princeton Landmarks in Mathematics, Princeton University Press, Princeton, NJ. Reprint of the 1970 original, Princeton Paperbacks.

(Erhan Bayraktar) Department of Mathematics, University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, MI 48109

E-mail address: erhan@umich.edu

(Savas Dayanik) Department of Operations Research and Financial Engineering, and the Bendheim Center for Finance, Princeton University, Princeton, NJ 08544

E-mail address: sdayanik@princeton.edu

(Ioannis Karatzas) Departments of Mathematics and Statistics, Columbia University, New York, NY 10027

E-mail address: ik@math.columbia.edu